Gc
975.5
H618
no.2
1681107

REYNOLDS HISTORICAL
GENEALOGY COLLECTION

ALLEN COUNTY PUBLIC LIBRARY
3 1833 02390 3567

Wynne's Hist. Docs. 2

# HISTORY

OF THE

# DIVIDING LINE

AND

# Other Tracts.

FROM THE PAPERS OF

WILLIAM BYRD,
OF WESTOVER, IN VIRGINIA, ESQUIRE.

V. 1

VOL. I.

*History of the Dividing Line.*

Richmond, Va.:
1866.

F863
.406

1681107

# Hiſtorical Documents

FROM THE

# Old Dominion.

## No. II.

"Gather up the Fragments that remain."

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2010 with funding from
Allen County Public Library Genealogy Center

http://www.archive.org/details/historyofdividin02byrd

Entered according to Act of Congress in the Year 1866,
By THOMAS H. WYNNE,
in the Clerk's Office of the District Court of the United States
for the Eastern District of Virginia.

# INTRODUCTION.

WILLIAM Byrd, the firſt of that Name who holds a conſpicuous Place in the Annals of Virginia, was an active, intelligent and ſucceſsful Man of Buſineſs, and exerted a conſiderable Influence in the Affairs of the Colony during the latter Part of the Seventeenth Century. On the 24th of December, 1687, he was appointed Receiver General of the royal Revenues, the Duties of which Office he continued to diſcharge until his Death, which occurred on the 4th of December, 1704; and among the Documents printed in this Volume is a Report from the Preſident and ſeveral others of the Council concerning the final Settlement of his Accounts in that Capacity.[1]

[1] See Vol. ii, P. 203, of this Reprint. In Maxwell's *Virginia Hiſtorical Regiſter*, Vol. iii, Pp. 181-188, will be found further Information with

His Son, William Byrd, born on the 28th of March, 1674, filled yet more important Positions, and attained a far greater Distinction. He died in his seventy-first Year on the 26th August, 1744. In the Language of the Epitaph upon his Tomb at Westover, his Seat in Charles City County,

Reference to these Accounts; and in earlier Portions of the same Work, Vol. i, 60-66, 114-119, Vol. ii, Pp. 78-83, 203-209, some additional Facts, chiefly in the Form of a Selection from his own Letters, concerning this William Byrd, who was—*not*, as Mr. Maxwell states, "a Burgess from Henrico, attending the Grand Assembly at Jamestown in that Character for several Years," within the Period of his published Letters from 1683 to 1685 inclusive, *but*,—a Member of the Council which formed the Upper House of the Grand Assembly; and this as early as 1682. (This Statement is made, erroneously of course, concerning his Son *prima facie*, in an Article in the *New American Cyclopedia*, Vol. iv, P. 167; which Article confounds the two Persons, making Father and Son one and the same, "born about 1650," which was a little before the Time of the Father's Birth; died in 1743, which was nearly forty Years after the Time of *his* Death, and a little before that of his Son.) It appears even from his Letters, to which Mr. Maxwell alludes, that in 1682 he was a Member of the Council, and, as such, of the General Court. In Hening's *Statutes at Large*, Vol. iii, P. 557, he is mentioned in the latter Capacity, 25 April, 1683, by the Style and Title of "Col. William Bird." This express Mention in an authentic Document would seem to establish conclusively that Campbell was in error in calling his Son "the first Colonel William Byrd" (*Hist. Virg.*, 2d Edit., 174, compare with Pp. 435-436); and that Mr. Maxwell was right in designating the Latter as "Colonel William Byrd, the Second of the Name and Title" (*Va. Hist. Reg.*, Vol. iv, P. 75). Though for the most Part he speaks of the Father as "Captain William Byrd," as he is called in several of our public Papers; of course, *before* he was Colonel. See further, Campbell's *History of Virginia*, 2d Edition, Pp. 420, 421.

" being born to one of the ampleſt fortunes in this country,
he was ſent early to England for his education,
where, under the care and direction of Sir Robert Southwell,
and ever favoured with his particular inſtructions,
he made a happy proficiency in polite and various learning.
By the means of the ſame noble friend,
he was introduced to the acquaintance of many of the firſt perſons of the age
for knowledge, wit, virtue, birth, or high ſtation,
and particularly contracted a moſt intimate and boſom friendſhip
with the learned and illuſtrious Charles Boyle, Earl of Orrery.
He was called to the bar in the Middle Temple,
ſtudied for ſome time in the Low Countries,
viſited the Court of France,
and was choſen Fellow of the Royal Society.
Thus eminently fitted for the ſervice and ornament of his country,
he was made Receiver General of his majeſty's revenues here,
was thrice appointed public agent to the court and miniſtry of England,
and, being thirty ſeven years a member,
at laſt became Preſident, of the Council of this Colony.
To all this were added a great elegance of taſte and life,
the well-bred gentleman and polite companion,
the ſplendid economiſt and prudent father of a family,
with the conſtant enemy of all exorbitant power,
and hearty friend to the liberties of his country."[1]

This Inſcription is given with two verbal Variations of little Conſequence, in Campbell's *Hiſtory of Virginia*, 2d Edit., P. 436, and with only one, the leſs Material of the two, in the firſt Edition of that Work, Pp. 113, 114. He ſeems to have been the immediate Succeſſor to his Father as Receiver General (ſee Vol. ii, P. 202 of this Reprint); and therefore it would have been more accurate to ſay, " he was *made* Receiver General of *her* Majeſty's Revenues here," Queen Anne being at that Time on the Throne; but it is poſſible he *continued* ſuch Receiver under *his* Majeſty George the

[1] Weſtover Manuſcripts, Edition of 1841, P. iv.

Firſt, and likewiſe under *his* Majeſty George the Second. From Records of the Council, ſtill preſerved, it appears that he became a Member of it and Preſident.

This monumental Tribute is, indeed, a cordial Expreſſion of the Merits of the Man; but, ſo far from being open to the Charge of Flattery, it falls ſhort of the Panegyric employed by moſt of thoſe who have written of Virginia Affairs during his Time. Rev. William Stith, a Contemporary, in the Preface to his unfiniſhed hiſtorical Work, which abruptly breaks off at the Year 1624, thus ſpeaks of the ſecond William Byrd:

"I muſt confeſs myſelf moſt endebted, in this Part of my Hiſtory, to a very full and fair Manuſcript of the London [Virginia] Company's Records, which was communicated to me by the late worthy Preſident of our Council, the Honourable William Byrd, Eſq. Neither could I excuſe myſelf if I did not likewiſe acknowledge with what Humanity and Politeneſs that well-bred Gentleman and Scholar not only communicated thoſe Manuſcripts to me, but alſo threw open his Library (the beſt and moſt copious Collection of Books in our Part of America), and was himſelf ever ſtudious and ſolicitous to ſearch out and give me whatever might be uſeful to my Undertaking."[1]

[1] Stith's *Hiſtory of Virginia*, Page v of Preface, dated "Varina, Dec. 10, 1746."

Of the Weſtover Library, founded by this Colonel Byrd, and augmented probably by *his* Son, the Third of the ſame "Name and Title,"

But the beſt Expoſition of his Character, and the moſt enduring Monument to his Memory, will be found in his own Writings, which, ſo far as is now known, with the ſingle Exception of a curious Paper concerning a Negro Boy, dappled with white Spots, contributed to the *Philoſophical Tranſactions* in 1697,[1]

ſome Account may be ſeen in Maxwell's *Virg. Hiſt. Reg.*, Vol. iv, Pp. 87-90.

Reſpecting the MSS. here mentioned by Stith, it has been commonly ſaid of late that they were purchaſed in London by the Col. Byrd here ſpoken of, Son of the Firſt, and Father of the Laſt that have now been noticed. It is ſtated in a Letter of Mr. Jefferſon (*Works*, Edit. 1856, Vol. vii, P. 312), that they were bought at the Sale of the Earl of Southampton's Library, "by Doctor Byrd, of Weſtover." But the moſt truſtworthy Account ſeems to be that given by Stith, in his Preface above quoted. "As theſe Records," ſays he, "are a very curious and valuable Piece of the Antiquities of our Country, I ſhall give the Reader an Account of them I received, many Years ago, in Converſation with Col. Byrd and Sir John Randolph. I had then no thoughts of writing the Hiſtory of Virginia, and therefore took leſs Notice than I otherwiſe ſhould have done. However, as I am perhaps the only Perſon now living anything acquainted with their Hiſtory, it will not be improper to give it to the Reader, as I judge it highly worthy of his Knowledge." He then gives a Relation of the Manner in which they were made, and authenticated and ſubſequently preſerved till the Death of an Earl (miſ-called by him Duke) of Southampton, "which happened in the Year 1667," when, he ſays, "the late Col. Byrd's Father, being then in England, purchaſed them of his (Lord Southampton's) Executors for ſixty Guineas." See further on this Subject an Article headed "Stith's Hiſtory of Virginia," *Southern Literary Meſſenger*, September, 1863, Pp. 554-565.

[1] *New American Cyclopedia*, Vol. iv, P. 167; Allibone's *Dictionary of Authors*, Edition of 1859, Vol. i, P. 318.

are all compriſed in the preſent Volume. Of theſe Writings, *The Hiſtory of the Dividing Line*, *A Journey to the Land of Eden*, and *A Progreſs to the Mines*, were publiſhed in the Year 1841, in a Volume entitled *The Weſtover Manuſcripts*, although they were not quite ſo fully preſented therein as might have been deſired. From the Preface to that Volume the following Paſſage is extracted:

"The Manuſcripts of Col. William Byrd, of Weſtover, the Father of the laſt Proprietor of the ſame Name, of different Dates from 1728 to 1736, are contained in a large folio Volume, bound in Parchment, which has been carefully preſerved in his Family, until recently placed in the Hands of the Editor. The Whole is in the Hand-writing of a Copyiſt, but written evidently under the immediate Direction of its Author, as there are numerous Corrections, Interlineations, and more conſiderable Additions, in his own Hand-writing. The Book was doubtleſs copied from the Author's earlieſt Draught on looſe Sheets, which were afterwards deſtroyed, as uſeleſs. At any Rate, this old Volume is the only Copy in Exiſtence.[1] The

[1] This Statement ſeems incorrect as to Part of the Contents of the Volume. Ten Years after the Date of the Publication from the Preface, to which the above Paſſage is taken, Mr. Lyman C. Draper, in a Letter to Mr. Charles Campbell, giving an Account of the Weſtover Library, the Catalogue whereof, "a three Quire quarto Volume, Gilt-edged, and gilt red Morocco Binding," was then, certainly, and probably is ſtill, extant, ſays: "In the Catalogue I ſee no Mention of the MS. Journal of Running the Dividing Line between Virginia and North Carolina in

Hiſtorical Society of Virginia obtained the Conſent of the Proprietor of the Manuſcripts to have them copied, with a View to Publication. But the Operations of that Society ceaſed before the Publication had been commenced, and when only one of the ſeveral Manuſcripts had been copied.[1] It was one of the lateſt Acts of the laſt Proprietor, George E. Harriſon, Eſq., of Brandon, to place at our Diſpoſal this highly

1728—Copies of which I have heretofore informed you, are in the Library of the American Philoſophical Society; one, judging from the Title, the ſame as that publiſhed among the 'Weſtover Manuſcripts' at Peterſburg, in 1841; the other, the 'Secret Hiſtory of the Dividing Line.' Neither of theſe have I yet found the right Time to call and examine, and the only Knowledge that I have of them is from the Catalogue of the Society which poſſeſſes them."—Maxwell's *Virg. Hiſt. Reg.*, Vol. iv, P. 88. Without further Information on the Subject, it is impoſſible even to form a reaſonable Conjecture whether theſe two Papers are "Copies" of one and the ſame Original, differing in nothing but the Title, or of ſubſtantially different Compoſitions; or whether indeed they are Copies at all, and not the very Originals, which, inſtead of being written on looſe Sheets and deſtroyed, as the Editor ſuppoſes, may have been given by the Widow of the laſt Colonel Byrd, who was a Philadelphia Lady, to the Society named, which had its Seat in that City. The Statement quoted in the Text had Reference, doubtleſs, only to Colonel Byrd's own Writings; elſe it would have been inaccurate as to yet another Part of the Contents of "this old Volume," as will preſently be ſeen.

[1] This relates to the firſt Aſſociation, known as the Virginia Hiſtorical Society. Several Years afterwards another, under the ſame Name, or the ſame under another Organization, ſprang into active Exiſtence, and continued to flouriſh until the breaking out of the late Civil War. *Its* "Operations" were then ſuſpended; but we may hope that the Society did not itſelf become extinct.

valued Work of this diſtinguiſhed and talented Anceſtor, with Permiſſion to publiſh any Portion, or the Whole of the Contents, provided the manuſcript Volume itſelf ſhould be preſerved uninjured, and afterwards reſtored to the Owner. The better to ſecure the latter Object, the Copy of the Part made for the Uſe of the Hiſtorical Society, has alſo been placed in our Hands by the Directors."

To this ſubſtantially correct Account of the Parchment-bound Folio, (the Contents of which, however, are not fully, nor as to their Dates quite accurately noticed in it) we ſubjoin a Statement made at our requeſt by the eſtimable and accompliſhed Widow of Mr. Harriſon. Theſe are her written Words:

"This Manuſcript was the Production of the ſecond Colonel Byrd, of Weſtover, who for his rare Wit, Learning and Wiſdom was ſtyled the 'Black Swan' of the Family. It deſcended to his Son, the laſt Colonel William Byrd, who married Miſs Mary Willing, of Philadelphia. She preſented this Book to George Evelyn Harriſon, the Son of her Daughter, Evelyn Byrd, who had married Mr. Benjamin Harriſon, of Brandon."

As already intimated, the Volume contains Articles not hitherto Printed, partly compoſed, partly collected only, by Col. Byrd; and all its Contents were tranſcribed by his Copyiſt without Regard to chronological Order, Connection of Subjects, or Method of any

Kind. Nevertheleſs, his accidental and chaotic Arrangement, or rather Want of all Arrangement, has been ſcrupulouſly followed in this Reprint; the Aim of which has been to give, as far as it was practicable with Types, *fac-ſimile* Copies of his Tranſcript; and with this View numerous Expreſſions are here "faithfully preſented," which, probably becauſe they were thought too free, were either altered or entirely ſuppreſſed in the partial Publication of 1841. It may be that the Editor of that Volume, following the Copy made for the Hiſtorical Society, was led unknowingly into theſe Alterations and Omiſſions, which poſſibly had been therein introduced, or they may have been the Reſult of his own Taſte and Judgment. Whatever the Fact, this Reprint has reverted to the original Manuſcript, and the Whole is here given with perfect Fidelity.

A few Words deſcriptive of the "Parchment-bound Folio" itſelf will conclude this Introduction.

The Cover, which is of white Vellum, meaſures fourteen and a half Inches in Length, ten and a quarter Inches in Breadth, and a quarter of an Inch in Thickneſs.

The Leaves are fourteen Inches Long, and nine and three quarter Inches wide.

The Volume is lettered on the Back, the Lettering beginning at one Inch from the Top, thus —

Hiſtory of the
Line and Other
Tracts.

On the Inside of the Cover is a Copy of the Book-plate, which is to be found in all the Books which belonged to Col. Byrd; containing his Arms (including several Quarterings), his Name "*William Byrd of Westover in Virginia Esqr*," and the Motto,

"NULLA PALLESCERE CULPA."

Two blank fly Leaves, plain, with Water Mark "T. Gilpin & Co Brandywine," and one Leaf, with Water Mark like the Rest of the Book, *i. e.*, Shield with fleur-de-lis and the Monogram WR. are between the Cover and the Commencement of the Manuscript. On the Top of the first Page of this latter Leaf, one Inch from the Top, is written,

"To Mrs Evelyn Taylor Harrison
from her affectionate
Mother Mary Byrd"

and below this,

"For
Master George Evelyn Harrison
of Brandon
Westover May 12th 1809."

On the opposite Side of this Leaf, which is discoloured and badly torn, all that can be read is,

Contents.
male Creed.
History of the line
&c. &c. &c.

There are 366 written Pages, including Contents and preſentation Page, 8 blank Leaves between the Proceedings of the Commiſſioners appointed to lay out the Bounds of the Northern Neck and the Eſſay on Bulk Tobacco, 51 blank Leaves at the End of the MS., and then two fly Leaves exactly ſimilar to thoſe in the firſt Part. Every Page is ruled in red Lines, encloſing the written Context, an Inch and a half from the outer and three quarters of an Inch from the inner Edge. Of written Leaves, there are 181, blank Leaves 59, Contents 1, fly Leaves 4; Total 246. To the Courteſy of Mrs. Harriſon, of Upper Brandon, the Widow of the late George E. Harriſon, Eſq., mentioned in the Extract from the Preface to the Volume publiſhed in 1841, we are indebted for the Opportunity to ſpread the Pages of this intereſting and valuable Contribution to the colonial Hiſtory of our State before the Students of American Civilization.

T. H. W.

*Richmond, Va., Nov.*, 1866.

# HISTORY[1]

OF THE

# DIVIDING LINE:

## Run in the Year 1728.

BEFORE I enter upon the Journal of the Line between Virginia and North Carolina, it will be neceſſary to clear the way to it, by ſhewing how the other Britiſh Colonies on the Main have, one after another, been carved out of Virginia, by Grants from his Majeſty's Royal Predeceſſors. All that part of the Northern American Continent now under the Dominion of the King of Great Britain, and Stretching quite as far as the Cape of Florida, went *at firſt under the General Name of Virginia.*

The only Diſtinction, in thoſe early Days, was, that all the Coaſt to the Southward of Cheſapeake Bay was called South Virginia, and all to the Northward of it, North Virginia.

The firſt Settlement of this fine Country was owing to that great Ornament of the Britiſh Nation, Sir Walter Raleigh, who obtained a Grant thereof from Queen Elizabeth of ever-glorious Memory, by Letters Patent, dated March the 25th, 1584.

[1] Written as late as 1736. See *poſt*. Unleſs that paſſage was an interpolation after the work was written.

But whether that Gentleman ever made a Voyage thither himſelf is uncertain; becauſe thoſe who have favour'd the Public with an Account of His Life mention nothing of it. However, thus much may be depended on, that Sir Walter invited ſundry perſons of Diſtinction to Share in his Charter, and join their Purſes with his in the Laudable project of fitting out a Colony to Virginia.

Accordingly, 2 Ships were Sent away that very Year, under the Command of his good Friends Amidas and Barlow, to take poſſeſſion of the Country in the Name of his Roial Miſtreſs, the Queen of England.

Theſe worthy Commanders, for the advantage of the Trade Winds, ſhaped their Courſe firſt to the Charibbe Iſlands, thence ſtretching away by the Gulph of Florida, dropt Anchor not far from Roanoak Inlet. They ventured aſhoar near that place upon an Iſland now called Colleton iſland, where they ſet up the Arms of England, and Claimed the Adjacent Country in Right of their Sovereign Lady, the Queen; and this Ceremony being duly performed, they kindly invited the neighbouring Indians to traffick with them.

Theſe poor people at firſt approacht the Engliſh with great Caution, having heard much of the Treachery of the Spaniards, and not knowing but theſe Strangers might be as treacherous as they. But, at length, diſcovering a kind of good nature in their looks, they ventured to draw near, and barter their Skins and Furs, for the Bawbles and Trinkets of the Engliſh.

Theſe firſt Adventurers made a very profitable Voyage, raiſing at leaſt a Thouſand per cent. upon their Cargo. Amongſt other Indian Commodities, they brought over Some of that bewitching Vegetable, Tobacco. And this being the firſt that ever came to England, Sir Walter thought he could do no leſs than make a preſent of Some of the brighteſt of it to His Roial Miſtreſs, for her own Smoaking.

The Queen graciouſly accepted of it, but finding her Stomach ſicken after two or three Whiffs, it was preſently whiſpered by the earl of Leiceſter's Faction, that Sir Walter had certainly Poiſon'd Her. But Her Majeſty ſoon recovering her Diſorder, obliged the Counteſs of Nottingham and all her Maids to Smoak a whole Pipe out amongſt them.

As it happen'd ſome Ages before to be the faſhion to Santer to the Holy Land, and go upon other Quixot Adventures, ſo it was now grown the Humour to take a Trip to America. The Spaniards had lately diſcovered Rich Mines in their Part of the Weſt Indies, which made their Maritime Neighbours eager to do ſo too. This Modiſh Frenzy being ſtill more Inflam'd by the Charming Account given of Virginia, by the firſt Adventurers, made many fond of removeing to ſuch a Paradiſe.

Happy was he, and ſtill happier She, that con'd get themſelves tranſported, fondly expecting their Coarſeſt Utenſils, in that happy place, would be of Maſſy Silver.

This made it eaſy for the Company to procure as many Volunteers as they wanted for their new Colony; but, like moſt other Undertakers who have no Aſſiſtance from the Public, they Starved the Deſign by too much Frugality; for, unwilling to Launch out at firſt into too much Expenſe, they Ship't off but few People at a Time, and Thoſe but Scantily provided. The Adventurers were, beſides, Idle and extravagant, and expected they might live without work in ſo plentiful a Country.

Theſe Wretches were ſet Aſhoar not far from Roanoak Inlet, but by ſome fatal diſagreement, or Lazineſs, were either Starved or cut to Pieces by the Indians.

Several repeated Miſadventures of this kind did, for ſome time, allay the Itch of Sailing to this New World; but the Diſtemper broke out again about the Year 1606. Then it happened that the Earl of Southampton and ſeveral other Perſons, eminent for their Quality and Eſtates, were invited into the Company, who

1729 April apply'd themſelves once more to People the then almoſt abandon'd Colony. For this purpoſe they embarkt about an Hundred men, moſt of them Riprobates of good Familys, and related to ſome of the company, who were men of Quality and Fortune.

The Ships that carried them made a Shift to find a more direct way to Virginia, and ventured thro the Capes into the Bay of Cheſapeak. The ſame Night they came to an Anchor at the Mouth of Powatan, the ſame as James River, where they built a Small Fort at a Place call'd Point Comfort.

This Settlement ſtood its ground from that time forward in ſpite of all the Blunders and Diſagreement of the firſt Adventurers, and the many Calamitys that befel the Colony afterwards.

The ſix gentlemen who were firſt named of the company by the crown, and who were empowered to chooſe an annual Preſident from among themſelves, were always engaged in Factions and Quarrels, while the reſt deteſted Work more than Famine. At this rate the Colony muſt have come to nothing, had it not been for the vigilance and Bravery of Capt. Smith, who ſtruck a Terrour into all the Indians round about. This Gentleman took ſome pains to perſwade the men to plant Indian corn, but they lookt upon all Labour as a Curſe. They choſe rather to depend upon the Muſty Proviſions that were ſent from England: and when they fail'd they were forct to take more pains to Seek for Wild Fruits in the Woods, than they woud have taken in tilling the Ground. Beſides, this Expoſd them to be knockt on the head by the Indians, and gave them Fluxes into the Bargain, which thind the Plantation very much. To Supply this mortality, they were reinforct the year following with a greater number of People, amongſt which were fewer Gentlemen and more Labourers, who, however, took care not to kill themſelves with Work.[2]

[2] This paragraph is in the form of a note in the manuſcript, but the reader will perceive that it is a portion of the text. Ed.

Theſe found the Firſt Adventurers in a very ſtarving condition, but relievd their wants with the freſh Supply they brought with them. From Kiquotan they extended themſelves as far as James-Town, where like true Engliſhmen, they built a Church that coſt no more than Fifty Pounds, and a Tavern that coſt Five hundred.

They had now made peace with the Indians, but there was one thing wanting to make that peace laſting. The Natives coud, by no means, perſwade themſelves that the Engliſh were heartily their Friends, ſo long as they diſdained to intermarry with them. And, in earneſt, had the Engliſh conſulted their own Security and the good of the Colony — Had they intended either to Civilize or Convert theſe Gentiles, they would have brought their Stomachs to embrace this prudent Alliance.

The Indians are generally tall and well-proportion'd, which may make full Amends for the Darkneſs of their Complexions. Add to this, that they are healthy & Strong, with Conſtitutions untainted by Lewdneſs, and not enfeebled by Luxury. Beſides, Morals and all conſidered, I cant think the Indians were much greater Heathens than the firſt Adventurers, who, had they been good Chriſtians, would have had the Charity to take this only method of converting the Natives to Chriſtianity. For, after all that can be ſaid, a ſprightly Lover is the moſt prevailing Miſſionary that can be ſent amongſt theſe, or any other Infidels.

Beſides, the poor Indians would have had leſs reaſon to Complain that the Engliſh took away their Land, if they had received it by way of Portion with their Daughters. Had ſuch Affinities been contracted in the Beginning, how much Bloodſhed had been prevented, and how populous would the Country have been, and, conſequently, how conſiderable? Nor wou'd the Shade of the Skin have been any reproach at this day; for if a Moor may be waſht white in 3 Generations, Surely an Indian might have been blancht in two.

The French, for their Parts, have not been ſo Squeamiſh in Canada, who upon Trial find abundance of Attraction in the Indians. Their late Grand Monarch thought it not below even the Dignity of a Frenchman to become one fleſh with this People, and therefore Ordered 100 Livres for any of his Subjects, Man or Woman, that woud intermarry with a Native.

By this piece of Policy we find the French Intereſt very much Strengthn'd amongſt the Savages, and their Religion, ſuch as it is, propagated juſt as far as their Love. And I heartily wiſh this well-concerted Scheme don't hereafter give the French an Advantage over his Majeſty's good Subjects on the Northern Continent of America.

About the ſame time New England was pared off from Virginia by Letters Patent, bearing date April the 10th, 1608. Several Gentlemen of the Town and Neighborhood of Plymouth obtain'd this Grant, with the Ld Chief Juſtice Popham at their Head.

Their Bounds were Specified to Extend from 38 to 45 Degrees of Northern Latitude, with a Breadth of one Hundred Miles from the Sea Shore. The firſt 14 Years, this Company encounter'd many Difficulties, and loſt many men, tho' far from being diſcouraged, they ſent over Numerous Recruits of Preſbyterians, every year, who for all that, had much ado to ſtand their Ground, with all their Fighting and Praying.

But about the year 1620, a Large Swarm of Diſſenters fled thither from the Severities of their Stepmother, The Church. Theſe Saints conceiving the ſame Averſion to the Copper Complexion of the Natives, with that of the firſt Adventurers to Virginia, would, on no Terms, contract Alliances with them, afraid perhaps, like the Jews of Old, leſt they might be drawn into Idolatry by thoſe Strange Women.

Whatever diſguſted them I cant ſay, but this falſe delicacy creating in the Indians a Jealouſy that the Engliſh were ill

affectd towards them, was the Cauſe that many of them were cut off, and the reſt Expoſed to various Diſtreſſes.

This Reinforcement was landed not far from Cape Codd, where, for their greater Security they built a Fort, and near it a Small Town, which in Honour of the Proprietors, was call'd New Plymouth. But they Still had many diſcouragements to Struggle with, tho' by being well Supported from Home, they by Degrees Triumph't over them all.

Their Brethren, after this, flockt over ſo faſt, that in a few Years they extended the Settlement one hundred Miles along the Coaſt, including Rhode Iſland and Martha's Vineyard.

Thus the Colony throve apace, and was throng'd with large Detachments of Independents and Preſbyterians, who thought themſelves perſecuted at home.

Tho' theſe People may be ridiculd for ſome Phariſaical Particularitys in their Worſhip and Behaviour, yet they were very uſeful Subjects, as being Frugal and Induſtrious, giving no Scandal or bad Example, at leaſt by any Open and Public Vices. By which excellent Qualities they had much the Advantage of the Southern Colony, who thought their being Members of the Eſtabliſh't Church ſufficient to Sanctifie very looſe and Profligate Morals. For this Reaſon New England improved much faſter than Virginia, and in Seven or Eight Years New Plimouth, like Switzerland, ſeemd too Narrow a Territory for its Inhabitants.

For this Reaſon, ſeveral Gentlemen of Fortune purchaſ'd of the Company that Canton of New England now calld Maſſachuſet colony. And King James confirm'd the Purchaſe by his Royal Charter, dated March the 4th, 1628. In leſs than 2 years after, above 1000 of the Puritanical Sect removed thither with conſiderable Effects, and theſe were followed by ſuch Crowds, that a Proclamation was iſſued in England, forbidding any more of his Majeſty's Subjects to be Shipt off. But this had the uſual Effect of things forbidden, and ſerv'd only to make

the Wilful Independents flock over the faſter. And about this time it was that Meſſrs. Hampden and Pym, and (ſome ſay) Oliver Cromwell, to ſhew how little they valued the King's Authority, took a Trip to New England.

In the Year 1630, the famous City of Boſton was built, in a Commodious Situation for Trade and Navigation, the ſame being on a Peninſula at the Bottom of Maſſachuſet Bay.

This Town is now the moſt conſiderable of any on the Britiſh Continent, containing at leaſt 8,000 houſes and 40,000 Inhabitants. The Trade it drives, is very great to Europe, and to every Part of the Weſt Indies, having near 1,000 Ships and leſſer Veſſels belonging to it.

Altho the Extent of the Maſſachuſet Colony reach't near one Hundred and Ten Miles in Length, and half as much in Breadth, yet many of its Inhabitants, thinking they wanted Elbow-room, quitted their Old Seats in the Year 1636, and formed 2 New Colonies: that of Connecticut and New Haven. Theſe King Charles the 2d erected into one Government in 1664, and gave them many Valuable Priviledges, and among the reſt, that of chuſing their own Governors. The Extent of theſe united Colonies may be about Seventy Miles long and fifty broad.

Beſides theſe ſeveral Settlements, there Sprang up ſtill another, a little more Northerly, called New Hampſhire. But that conſiſting of no more than two Counties, and not being in condition to Support the Charge of a Diſtinct Government, was glad to be incorporated with that of Maſſachuſet, but upon Condition, however, of being Named in all Public Acts, for fear of being quite loſt and forgot in the Coalition.

In like manner New Plymouth joyn'd itſelf to Maſſachuſet, except only Rhode Iſland, which, tho' of ſmall Extent, got itſelf erected into a Separate government by a Charter from King Charles the 2d, ſoon after the Reſtoration, and continues ſo to this day.

Theſe Governments all continued in Poſſeſſion of their Reſpective Rights and Priviledges till the Year 1683, when that of Maſſachuſet was made Void in England by a Quo Warranto.

In Conſequence of which the King was pleaſed to name Sir Edmund Andros His firſt Governor of that Colony. This Gentleman, it ſeems, ruled them with a Rod of Iron till the Revolution, when they laid unhallowed Hands upon Him, and ſent him Priſoner to England.

This undutiful proceeding met with an eaſy forgiveneſs at that happy Juncture. King William and his Royal Conſort were not only pleaſd to overlook this Indignity offered to their Governor, but being made ſenſible how unfairly their Charter had been taken away, moſt graciouſly granted them a new one.

By this ſome new Franchiſes were given them, as an Equivalent for thoſe of Coining Money and Electing a governour, which were taken away. However, the other Colonies of Connecticut and Rhode Iſland had the luck to remain in Poſſeſſion of their Original Charters, which to this Day have never been calld in Queſtion.

The next Country diſmemberd from Virginia was New Scotland, claimd by the Crown of England in Virtue of the firſt Diſcovery by Sebaſtian Cabot. By Colour of this Title, King James the firſt granted it to Sir William Alexander by Patent, dated September the 10th, 1621.

But this Patentee never ſending any Colony thither, and the French believing it very Convenient for them, obtaind a Surrender of it from their good Friend and Ally, king Charles the 2d, by the Treaty of Breda. And, to ſhow their gratitude, they ſtirred up the Indians ſoon after to annoy their Neighbours of New England. Murders happend continually to his Majeſty's Subjects by their Means, till S^r^ William Phipps took their Town of Port Royal, in the year 1690. But as the Engliſh are better at taking than keeping Strong Places, the French retook it ſoon,

and remaind Maſters of it till 1710, when General Nicholſon wreſted it, once more, out of their Hands.

Afterwards the Queen of Great Britain's Right to it was recognizd and confirmed by the treaty of Utrecht.

Another Limb lopt off from Virginia was New York, which the Dutch ſeized very unfairly, on pretence of having Purchaſd it from Captain Hudſon, the firſt Diſcoverer. Nor was their way of taking Poſſeſſion of it a whit more juſtifiable than their pretended Title.

Their Weſt India Company tamperd with ſome worthy Engliſh Skippers (who had contracted with a Swarm of Engliſh Diſſenters to tranſport them to Hudſon river) by no means to land them there, but to carry 'em ſome leagues more northerly.

This Dutch Fineſſe took Exactly, and gave the Company time ſoon after to ſeize the Hudſon River for themſelves. But S^r^ Samuel Argall, then governor of Virginia, underſtanding how the King's Subjects had been abuſed by theſe Republicans, marcht thither with a good Force, and obligd them to renounce all pretenſions to that Country. The worſt of it was, the Knight depended on their Parole to Ship themſelves to Braſile, but took no meaſures to make this Slippery People as good as their Word.

No ſooner was the good Governor retired, but the honeſt Dutch began to build Forts and ſtrengthen themſelves in their ill-gotten Poſſeſſions; nor did any of the King's Liege People take the trouble to drive theſe Intruders thence. The Civil War in England, And the Confuſions it brought forth, allowed no Leiſure for ſuch diſtant Conſiderations. Tho tis ſtrange that the Protector, who neglected no Occaſion to mortify the Dutch, did not afterwards call them to Account for this breach of Faith. However, after the Reſtoration, the King ſent a Squadron of his Ships of War, under the Command of ſir Robert Carr, and reduced that Province to his Obedience.

Some time after, His Majeſty was Pleaſd to grant that Coun-

try to his Royal Highneſs, the Duke of York, by Letters Patent, dated March the 12th, 1664. But to ſhew the Modeſty of the Dutch to the Life, tho they had no Shaddow of Right to New York, yet they demanded Surinam, a more valuable Country, as an Equivalent for it, and our able Miniſters at that time had the Generoſity to give it them.

But what wounded Virginia deepeſt was the cutting off MARYLAND from it, by Charter from King Charles the 1ſt, to ſir George Calvert, afterwards Ld Baltimore, bearing Date the 20th of June, 1632. The Truth of it is, it begat much Speculation in thoſe days, how it came about that a good Proteſtant King ſhould beſtow ſo bountiful a Grant upon a Zealous Roman catholic. But 'tis probable it was one fatal Inſtance amongſt many other of his Majeſty's complaiſance to the Queen.

However that happened, 'tis certain this Province afterwards provd a Commodious Retreat for Perſons of that Communion. The Memory of the Gun-Powder-Treaſon-Plot was Still freſh in every body's mind, and made England too hot for Papiſts to live in, without danger of being burnt with the Pope, every 5th of November; for which reaſon Legions of them tranſplanted themſelves to Maryland in Order to be Safe, as well from the Inſolence of the Populace as the Rigour of the Government.

Not only the Gun-Powder-Treaſon, but every other Plot, both pretended and real, that has been trump't up in England ever Since, has helpt to People his Lordſhip's Propriety.

But what has provd moſt Serviceable to it was the Grand Rebellion againſt King Charles the 1ſt, when every thing that bore the leaſt tokens of Popery was ſure to be demoliſht, and every man that Profeſt it was in Jeopardy of Suffering the ſame kind of Martyrdom the Romiſh Prieſts do in Sweden.

Soon after the Reduction of New York, the Duke was pleaſd to grant out of it all that Tract of Land included between Hudſon and Delaware Rivers, to the Lord Berkley and Sir George

Carteret, by Deed dated June the 24th, 1664. And when theſe Grantees came to make Partition of this Territory, His Lordp's Moiety was calld Weſt Jerſey, and that to Sir George, Eaſt Jerſey.

But before the Date of this Grant, the Swedes began to gain Footing in part of that Country; tho, after they ſaw the Fate of New York, they were glad to Submit to the King of England, on the eaſy Terms of remaining in their Poſſeſſions, and rendering a Moderate Quit-rent. Their Poſterity continue there to this Day, and think their Lot caſt in a much fairer Land than Dalicarlia.

The Proprietors of New Jerſey, finding more Trouble than Profit in their new Dominions, made over their Right to ſeveral other Perſons, who obtaind a freſh Grant from his Royal Highneſs, dated March the 14th, 1682.

Several of the Grantees, being Quakers and Anabaptiſts, faild not to encourage many of their own Perſwaſion to remove to this Peaceful Region. Amongſt them were a Swarm of Scots Quakers, who were not tolerated to exerciſe the Gifts of the Spirit in their own Country.

Beſides the hopes of being Safe from Perſecution in this Retreat, the New Proprietors inveigled many over by this tempting Account of the Country: that it was a Place free from thoſe 3 great Scourges of Mankind, Prieſts, Lawyers, and Phyſicians. Nor did they tell a Word of a Lye, for the People were yet too poor to maintain theſe Learned Gentlemen, who, every where, love to be paid well for what they do; and, like the Jews, cant breathe in a Climate where nothing is to be got.

The Jerſeys continued under the Government of theſe Proprietors till the Year 1702, when they made a formal Surrender of the Dominion to the Queen, reſerving however the Property of the Soil to themſelves. So ſoon as the Bounds of New Jerſey came to be diſtinctly laid off, it appeared that there was ſtill

a Narrow Slipe of Land, lying betwixt that Colony and Maryland. Of this, William Penn, a Man of much Worldly Wiſdom, and ſome Eminence among the Quakers, got early Notice, and, by the Credit he had with the Duke of York, obtaind a Patent for it, Dated March the 4th, 1680.

It was a little Surpriſing to ſome People how a Quaker ſhoud be ſo much in the good Graces of a Popiſh Prince; tho, after all, it may be pretty well Accounted for. This Ingenious Perſon had not been bred a Quaker; but, in his Earlier days, had been a Man of Pleaſure about the Town. He had a beautiful form and very taking Addreſs, which made him Succeſsful with the Ladies, and particularly with a Miſtreſs of the Duke of Monmouth. By this Gentlewoman he had a Daughter, who had Beauty enough to raiſe her to be a Dutcheſs, and continued to be a Toaſt full 30 Years.

But this Amour had like to have brought our Fine Gentleman in Danger of a Duell, had he not diſcreetly ſhelterd himſelf under this peaceable Perſwaſion. Beſides, his Father having been a Flag-Officer in the Navy, while the Duke of York was Lord High Admiral, might recommend the Son to his Favour. This piece of Secret Hiſtory I thought proper to mention, to wipe off the Suſpicion of his having been Popiſhly inclind.

This Gentleman's firſt Grant confind Him within pretty Narrow Bounds, giving him only that Portion of Land which contains Buckingham, Philadelphia and Cheſter Counties. But to get theſe Bounds a little extended, He puſht His Intereſt ſtill further with His Royal Highneſs, and obtaind a freſh Grant of the three Lower Counties, called New-Caſtle, Kent and Suſſex, which ſtill remaind within the New York Patent, and had been luckily left out of the Grant of New Jerſey.

The Six Counties being thus incorporated, the Proprietor dignifyd the whole with the Name of Penſilvania.

The Quakers flockt over to this Country in Shoals, being

averſe to go to Heaven the ſame way with the Biſhops. Amongſt them were not a few of good Subſtance, who went Vigorouſly upon every kind of Improvement; and thus much I may truly ſay in their Praiſe, that by Diligence and Frugality, For which this Harmleſs Sect is remarkable, and by haveing no Vices but ſuch as are Private, they have in a few Years made Penſilvania a very fine Country.

The Truth is, they have obſerved exact Juſtice with all the Natives that border upon them; they have purchaſd all their Lands from the Indians; and tho they paid but a Triffle for them, it has procured them the Credit of being more righteous than their Neighbours. They have likewiſe had the Prudence to treat them kindly upon all Occaſions, which has ſavd them from many Wars and Maſſacres wherein the other Colonies have been indiſcreetly involved. The truth of it is, a People whoſe Principles forbid them to draw the Carnal Sword, were in the Right to give no Provocation.

Both the French and Spaniards had, in the Name of their Reſpective Monarchs, long ago taken Poſſeſſion of that Part of the Northern Continent that now goes by the Name of Carolina; but finding it Produced neither Gold nor Silver, as they greedily expected, and meeting ſuch returns from the Indians as their own Cruelty and Treachery deſerved, they totally abandond it. In this deſerted Condition that country lay for the Space of 90 Years, till King Charles the 2d, finding it a DERELICT, granted it away to the Earl of Clarendon and others, by His Royal Charter, dated March the 24th, 1663. The Boundary of that Grant towards Virginia was a due Weſt Line from Luck-Iſland, (the ſame as Colleton Iſland,) lying in 36 degrees N. Latitude, quite to the South Sea.

But afterwards Sir William Berkeley, who was one of the Grantees and at that time Governour of Virginia, finding a Territory of 31 Miles in Breadth between the Inhabited Part of Virginia

and the above-mentioned Boundary of Carolina, adviſd the Lord Clarendon of it. And His Lordp had Intereſt enough with the King to obtain a Second Patent to include it, dated June the 30th, 1665.

This laſt Grant deſcribes the Bounds between Virginia and Carolina in theſe Words: "To run from the North End of Corotuck-Inlet, due Weſt to Weyanoke Creek, lying within or about the Degree of Thirty-Six and Thirty Minutes of Northern Latitude, and from thence Weſt, in a direct Line, as far as the South-Sea." Without queſtion, this Boundary was well known at the time the Charter was Granted, but in a long Courſe of years Weynoke Creek loſt its name, ſo that it became a Controverſy where it lay. Some Ancient Perſons in Virginia affirmd it was the ſame with Wicocon, and others again in Carolina were as Poſitive it was Nottoway River.

In the mean time, the People on the Frontiers Enterd for Land, & took out Patents by Gueſs, either from the King or the Lords Proprietors. But the Crown was like to be the loſer by this Incertainty, becauſe the Terms both of taking up and ſeating Land were eaſier much in Carolina. The Yearly Taxes to the Public were likewiſe there leſs burthenſome, which laid Virginia under a Plain diſadvantage.

This Conſideration put that Government upon entering into Meaſures with North Carolina, to terminate the Diſpute, and ſettle a Certain Boundary between the two colonies. All the Difficulty was, to find out which was truly Weyanoke Creek. The Difference was too Conſiderable to be given up by either ſide, there being a Territory of 15 Miles betwixt the two Streams in controverſy.

However, till that Matter could be adjuſted, it was agreed on both ſides, that no Lands at all Should be granted within the diſputed Bounds. Virginia obſerved this Agreement punctually, but I am ſorry I cant ſay the Same of North-Carolina. The

great Officers of that Province were loath to loſe the Fees accrueing from the Grants of Land, and ſo private Intereſt got the better of Public Spirit; and I wiſh that were the only Place in the World where ſuch politicks are faſhionable.

All the Steps that were taken afterwards in that Affair, will beſt appear by the Report of the Virginia-Commiſſioners, recited in the Order of Council given at St. James's, March the 1ſt, 1710, ſet down in the Appendix.

It muſt be owned, the Report of thoſe Gentlemen was Severe upon the then commiſſioners of North-Carolina, and particularly upon Mr. Moſeley. I wont take upon me to ſay with how much Juſtice they ſaid ſo many hard things, tho it had been fairer Play to have given the Parties accuſd a Copy of ſuch Repreſentation, that they might have anſwerd what they could for themſelves.

But ſince that was not done, I muſt beg leave to ſay thus much in behalf of Mr. Moſeley, that he was not much in the Wrong to find fault with the Quadrant produced by the Surveyors of Virginia, becauſe that Inſtrument plact the Mouth of Notoway River in the Latitude of 37 Degrees; whereas, by an Accurate Obſervation made Since, it appears to lie in 36° 30′ $\frac{1}{2}$′, ſo that there was an Error of near 30 minutes, either in the Inſtrument or in thoſe who made uſe of it.

Beſides, it is evident the Mouth of Notoway River agrees much better with the Latitude, wherein the Carolina Charter ſuppoſed Wyanoak Creek, (namely, in or about 36 Degrees and 30 minutes,) than it does with Wicocon Creek, which is about 15 Miles more Southerly.

This being manifeſt, the Intention of the King's Grant will be pretty exactly anſwerd, by a due Weſt Line drawn from Corotuck Inlet to the Mouth of Notaway River, for which reaſon tis probable that was formerly calld Wyanoak-Creek, and might change its Name when the Nottoway Indians came to

live upon it, which was ſince the Date of the laſt Carolina Charter.

The Lievt Governor of Virginia, at that time Colo Spotſwood, ſearching into the Bottom of this Affair, made very Equitable Propoſals to Mr. Eden, at that time Governour of North Carolina, in Order to put an End to this Controverſy. Theſe, being formd into Preliminaries, were Signd by both Governours, and tranſmitted to England, where they had the Honour to be ratifyed by his late Majeſty and Aſſented to by the Lords Proprietors of Carolina.

Accordingly an Order was ſent by the late King to Mr. Gooch, afterwards Lievt Governor of Virginia, to purſue thoſe Preliminarys exactly. In Obedience thereunto, he was pleaſed to appoint Three of the Council of that colony to be Commiſſioners on the Part of Virginia, who, in Conjunction with others to be named by the Governor of North Carolina, were to ſettle the Boundary between the 2 Governments, upon the Plan of the above-mentiond Articles.

Two Experienct Surveyors were at the ſame time directed to wait upon the Commiſſioners, Mr. Mayo, who made the Accurate Mapp of Barbadoes, and Mr. Irvin, the Mathematick Profeſſor of William and Mary Colledge. And becauſe a good Number of Men were to go upon this Expedition, a Chaplain was appointed to attend them, and the rather becauſe the People on the Frontiers of North-Carolina, who have no Miniſter near them, might have an Opportunity to get themſelves and their Children baptizd.

Of theſe proceedings on our Part, immediate Notice was ſent to Sir Richard Everard, Governor of North Carolina, who was deſired to Name Commiſſioners for that Province, to meet thoſe of Virginia at Crotuck-Inlet the Spring following. Accordingly he appointed Four Members of the Council of that Province to take Care of the Intereſts of the Lds Proprietors. Of theſe, 1728 February

1728 February Mr. Moſeley was to ſerve in a Double Capacity, both as Commiſſioner and Surveyor. For that reaſon there was but one other Surveyor from thence, Mr. Swan. All the Perſons being thus agreed upon, they ſettled the time of Meeting to be at Corotuck, March the 5th, 1728.

In the Mean time, the requiſite Preparations were made for ſo long and tireſome a Journey; and becauſe there was much work to be done and ſome Danger from the Indians, in the uninhabited Part of the Country, it was neceſſary to provide a Competent Number of Men. Accordingly, Seventeen able Hands were liſted on the Part of Virginia, who were moſt of them Indian Traders and expert Woodſmen.

27 Theſe good men were ordered to come armed with a Muſquet and a Tomahack, or large Hatchet, and provided with a Sufficient Quantity of Ammunition.

They likewiſe brought Proviſions of their own for ten days, after which time they were to be furniſht by the Government. Their March was appointed to be on the 27th of February, on which day one of the Commiſſioners met them at their Rendezvous, and proceeded with them as far as Colo Allen's. This Gentleman is a great œconomiſt, and Skilld in all the Arts of living well at an eaſy expenſe.

28 They proceeded in good Order through Surry County, as far as the Widdow Allen's who had copied Solomon's complete houſewife exactly. At this Gentlewoman's Houſe, the other two Commiſſioners had appointed to join them, but were detaind by ſome Accident at Williamſburg, longer than their appointment.

29 They purſued their march thro the Iſle of Wight and obſervd a moſt dreadful Havock made by a late Hurricane, which happend in Auguſt, 1726. The Violence of it had not reachd above a Quarter of a Mile in Breadth, but within that Compaſs had levelld all before it. Both Trees and Houſes were laid flat

on the Ground, and ſeveral things hurld to an incredible diſtance. 1728
Tis happy ſuch violent Guſts are confind to ſo narrow a Chan- February
nel, becauſe they carry deſolation wherever they go. In the
Evening they reacht Mr. Godwin's, on the South Branch of
Nanſemond River, where they were treated with abundance of
Primitive Hoſpitality.

March 1. This Gentleman was ſo kind as to ſhorten their March
Journey, by ſetting thom over the river. They coaſted the
N E Side of the Diſmal for ſeveral miles together, and found all
the Grounds bordering upon it very full of Sloughs. The Trees
that grew near it lookt very Reverend, with the long Moſs that
hung dangling from their Branches. Both cattle and Horſes eat
this Moſs greedily in Winter when other Provender is Scarce,
tho it is apt to ſcowr them at firſt. In that moiſt Soil too grew
abundance of that kind of Myrtle which bears the Candle-
Berries. There was likewiſe, here and there, a Gall-buſh,
which is a beautiful Evergreen, and may be cut into any Shape.
It derives its name from its Berries turning Water black, like
the Galls of an oak.

When this Shrub is tranſplanted into Gardens, it will not
thrive without frequent watering.

The two other commiſſioners came up with them juſt at their
Journey's end, and that evening they arrivd all together at Mr.
Craford's, who lives on the South Branch of Elizabeth-River,
over againſt Norfolk. Here the Commiſſioners left the Men
with all the Horſes and heavy Baggage, and croſſt the River
with their Servants only, for fear of making a Famine in the
Town.

Norfolk has moſt the ayr of a Town of any in Virginia. There
were then near 20 Brigantines and Sloops riding at the Wharves,
and oftentimes they have more. It has all the advantages of
Situation requiſite for Trade and Navigation. There is a Secure
Harbour for a good Number of Ships of any Burthen. Their

1728 March River divides itſelf into 3 Several Branches, which are all Navigable. The Town is ſo near the ſea, that its Veſſels may Sail in and out in a few Hours. Their Trade is Chiefly to the Weſt-Indies, whither they export abundance of Beef, Pork, Flour and Lumber. The worſt of it is, they contribute much towards debauching the Country by importing abundance of Rum, which, like Ginn in Great Britain, breaks the Conſtitution, Vitiates the Morals, and ruins the Induſtry of moſt of the Poor people of this Country.

This Place is the Mart for moſt of the Commodities produced in the Adjacent Parts of North Carolina. They have a pretty deal of Lumber from the Borderers on the Diſmal, who make bold with the King's Land there abouts, without the leaſt Ceremony. They not only maintain their Stocks upon it, but get Boards, Shingles and other Lumber out of it in great Abundance.

The Town is built on a level Spot of Ground upon Elizabeth River, the Banks whereof are neither ſo high as to make the landing of Goods troubleſome, or ſo low as to be in Danger of overflowing. The Streets are Straight, and adornd with ſeveral Good Houſes, which Encreaſe every Day. It is not a Town of Ordinarys and Publick Houſes, like moſt others in this Country, but the Inhabitants conſiſt of Merchants, Ship-Carpenters and other uſeful Artiſans, with Sailors enough to manage their Navigation. With all theſe Conveniences, it lies under the two great diſadvantages that moſt of the Towns in Holland do, by having neither good Air nor good Water. The two Cardinal Vertues that make a Place thrive, Induſtry and Frugality, are ſeen here in Perfection; and ſo long as they can baniſh Luxury and Idleneſs, the Town will remain in a happy and flouriſhing Condition.

The Method of building Wharffs here is after the following Manner. They lay down long Pine Logs, that reach from the Shore to the Edge of the Channel. Theſe are bound faſt to-

gether by Croſſ-Pieces notcht into them, according to the Archi- 1728
tecture of the Log-Houſes in North Carolina. A wharff built March
thus will ſtand Several Years, in ſpight of the Worm, which bites here very much, but may be ſoon repaird in a Place where ſo many Pines grow in the Neighbourhood.

The Commiſſioners endeavourd, in this Town, to liſt Three more men to ſerve as Guides in that dirty Part of the Country, but found that theſe People knew juſt enough of that frightful Place to avoid it.

They had been told that thoſe Netherlands were full of Bogs, of Marſhes and Swamps, not fit for Human Creatures to engage in, and this was Reaſon enough for them not to hazard their Perſons. So they told us, flat and plain, that we might een daggle thro the mire by Our-Selves for them.

The worſt of it was, we coud not learn from any body in this Town, what Rout to take to Coratuck Inlet; till at laſt we had the fortune to meet with a Borderer upon North Carolina, who made a rough Sketch of that Part of the Country. Thus, upon ſeeing how the Land lay, we determind to march directly to Preſcot Landing upon N W River, and proceed from thence by Water to the Place where our Line was to begin.

In Purſuance of this Reſolution we croſſt the River this Morn- 4th
ing to Powder-Point, where we all took Horſe; and the Grandees of the Town, with great Courteſy, conducted us Ten Miles on our way, as far as the long Bridge built over the S Branch of the River. The Parſon of the Pariſh, Mr. Marſton, a painful Apoſtle from the Society, made one in this Ceremonious Cavalcade.

At the Bridge, theſe Gentlemen, wiſhing us a good Deliverance, returnd, and then a Troop of Light Horſe eſcorted us as far as Preſcot-Landing, upon N W river. Care had been taken beforehand to provide 2 Periaugas to lie ready at that Place to tranſport us to Coratuck Inlet. Our Zeal was ſo great to get

1728 March thither at the time time appointed, that we hardly allowd ourſelves leiſure to eat, which in truth we had the leſs Stomach to, by reaſon the dinner was ſerved up by the Landlord, whoſe Noſe ſtood on ſuch tickliſh Terms, that it was in Danger of falling into the Diſh. We therefore made our Repaſt very ſhort, and then embarkt with only the Surveyors and Nine choſen Men, leaving the reſt at Mr. W——n's to take Care of the Horſes and Baggage. There we alſo left our Chaplain, with the Charitable Intent, that the Gentiles round about might have time and Opportunity, if they pleaſd, of getting themſelves and their children baptizd.

We rowd down N W River about 18 miles, as far as the Mouth of it, where it empties itſelf into Albermarle Sound. It was a really Delightful Sight, all the way, to ſee the Banks of the River adornd with Myrtle, Laurel and Bay Trees, which preſerve their Verdure the Year round, tho it muſt be ownd that theſe beautiful Plants, Sacred to Venus and Apollo, grow commonly in a very dirty Soil. The River is, in moſt Places, fifty or Sixty Yards wide, without ſpreading much wider at the Mouth. 'Tis remarkable it was never known to Ebb and flow till the year 1713, when a Violent Storm opend a new Inlet, about 5 Miles South of the old one; ſince which Convulſion, the Old Inlet is almoſt choakd up by the Shifting of the Sand, and grows both Narrower and Shoaller every day.

It was dark before we could reach the Mouth of the River, where our wayward Stars directed us to a Miſerable Cottage. The Landlord was lately removed, Bag and Baggage, from Maryland, thro a Strong Antipathy he had to work and paying his Debts. For want of our Tent, we were obligd to Shelter our Selves in this wretched Hovel, where we were almoſt devourd by Vermin of Various kinds. However, we were above complaining, being all Philoſophers enough to improve ſuch Slender Diſtreſſes into Mirth and good Humour.

5. The Day being now come, on which we had agreed to meet the Commiſſioners of North Carolina, we embarkd very early, which we coud the eaſier do, having no Temptation to ſtay where we were. We Shapt our Courſe along the South End of Knot's Iſland, there being no Paſſage open on the North. 1728 March

Farther Still to the Southward of us, we diſcoverd two Smaller Iſlands, that go by the names of Bell's and Churche's Iſles. We alſo ſaw a ſmall New England Sloop riding in the Sound, a little to the South of our Courſe. She had come in at the New-Inlet, as all other Veſſels have done ſince the opening of it. This Navigation is a little difficult, and fit only for Veſſels that draw no more than ten feet Water.

The Trade hither is engroſſt by the Saints of New England, who carry off a great deal of Tobacco, without troubling themſelves with paying that Impertinent Duty of a Penny a Pound.

It was juſt Noon before we arrivd at Coratuck Inlet, which is now ſo ſhallow that the Breakers fly over it with a horrible Sound, and at the ſame time afford a very wild Proſpect. On the North ſide of the Inlet, the High Land terminated in a Bluff Point, from which a Spit of Sand extended itſelf towards tht South-Eaſt, full half a Mile. The Inlet lies between that Spit and another on the South of it, leaving an Opening of not quite a Mile, which at this day is not practicable for any Veſſel whatſoever. And as ſhallow as it now is, it continues to fill up more and more, both the Wind and Waves rolling in the Sands from the Eaſtern Shoals.

About two a Clock in the Afternoon we were joind by two of the Carolina Commiſſioners, attended by Mr. S—n, their Surveyor. The other two were not quite ſo punctual, which was the more unlucky for us, becauſe there could be no ſport till they came. Theſe Gentlemen, it ſeems, had the Carolina-Commiſſion in their keeping, notwithſtanding which they coud

1728 March not forbear paying too much regard to a Proverb—faſhionable in ther Country,—not to make more haſt than good Speed.

However, that we who were punctual might not ſpend our precious time unprofitably, we took the Several bearings of the Coaſt. We alſo ſurveyd part of the Adjacent High Land, which had ſcarcely any Trees growing upon it, but Cedars. Among the Shrubs, we were ſhewed here and there a Buſh of Carolina-Tea calld Japon, which is one Species of the Phylarrea. This is an Evergreen, the Leavs whereof have ſome reſemblance to Tea, but differ very widely both in Taſt and Flavour.

We alſo found ſome few Plants of the Spired Leaf Silk graſs, which is likewiſe an Evergreen, bearing on a lofty Stemm a large Cluſter of Flowers of a Pale Yellow. Of the Leaves of this Plant the People thereabouts twiſt very ſtrong Cordage.

A vertuoſo might divert himſelf here very well, in picking up Shells of various Hue and Figure, and amongſt the reſt, that Species of Conque Shell which the Indian Peak is made of. The Extremities of theſe Shells are Blue and the reſt white, ſo that Peak of both theſe Colours are drilld out of one and the ſame Shell, Serving the Natives both for Ornament and Money, and are eſteemd by them far beyond Gold and Silver.

The Cedars were of Singular uſe to us in the Abſence of our Tent, which we had left with the reſt of the Baggage for fear of overloading the Periaugas. We made a Circular Hedge of the Branches of this Tree, Wrought ſo cloſe together as to fence us againſt the Cold Winds. We then kindled a rouſeing fire in the Center of it, and lay round it, like ſo many Knights Templars. But, as comfortable as this Lodging was, the Surveyors turnd out about 2 in the Morning to try the Variation by a Meridian taken from the North Star, and found it to be ſomewhat leſs than three degrees Weſt.

The Commiſſioners of the Neighbouring Colony came better provided for the Belly than the Buſineſs. They brought not

above two men along with them that would put their Hands to any thing but the Kettle and the Frying-Pan. Theſe ſpent ſo much of their Induſtry that way, that they had as little Spirit as Inclination for Work. 1728 March

At Noon, having a Perfect Obſervation, we found the Lati- 6
tude of Coratuck Inlet to be 36 Degrees and 31 Minutes.

Whilſt we were buſied about theſe Neceſſary Matters, our Skipper row'd to an Oyſter Bank juſt by, and loaded his Periauga with Oyſters as Savoury and well-taſted as thoſe from Colcheſter or Walfleet, and had the advantage of them, too, by being much larger and fatter.

About 3 in the Afternoon the two lagg Commiſſioners arriv'd, and after a few decent excuſes for making us wait, told us they were ready to enter upon Buſineſs as ſoon as we pleaſ'd. The firſt Step was to produce our reſpective Powers, and the Commiſſion from each Governor was diſtinctly read, and Copies of them interchangeably deliver'd.

It was obſerv'd by our Carolina Friends, that the Latter Part of the Virginia Commiſſion had ſomething in it a little too lordly and Poſitive. In anſwer to which we told them twas neceſſary to make it thus peremptory, leſt the preſent Commiſſioners might go upon as fruitleſs an Errand as their Predeceſſors. The former Commiſſioners were ty'd down to Act in Exact Conjunction with thoſe of Carolina, and ſo could not advance one Step farther, or one Jot faſter, than they were pleaſ'd to permit them.

The Memory of that diſappointment, therefore, induc'd the Government of Virginia to give fuller Powers to the preſent Commiſſioners, by Authorizing them to go on with the Work by Themſelves, in Caſe thoſe of Corolina ſhould prove unreaſonable, and refuſe to join with them in carrying the buſineſs to Execution. And all this was done leſt His Majeſty's gracious Intention ſhoud be fruſtrated a Second time.

1728 March After both Commiſſions were conſiderd, the firſt Queſtion was, where the Dividing Line was to begin. This begat a Warm debate; the Virginia Commiſſioners contending, with a great deal of Reaſon, to begin at the End of the Spitt of Sand, which was undoubtedly the North Shore of Coratuck Inlet. But thoſe of Carolina inſiſted Strenuouly, that the Point of High Land ought rather to be the Place of Beginning, becauſe that was fixt and certain, whereas the Spitt of Sand was ever Shifting, and did actually run out farther now than formerly. The Conteſt laſted ſome Hours, with great Vehemence, neither Party receding from their Opinion that Night. But next Morning, Mr. M....., to convince us he was not that Obſtinate Perſon he had been repreſented, yielded to our Reaſons, and found Means to bring over his Collegues.

Here we began already to reap the Benefit of thoſe Peremptory Words in our Commiſſion, which in truth added ſome Weight to our Reaſons. Nevertheleſs, becauſe poſitive proof was made by the Oaths of two Credible Witneſſes, that the Spitt of Sand had advanced 200 Yards towards the Inlet ſince the Controverſy firſt began, we were willing for Peace-ſake to make them that allowance. Accordingly we fixed our Beginning about that Diſtance North of the Inlet, and there Ordered a Cedar-Poſt to be driven deep into the Sand for our beginning. While we continued here, we were told that on the South Shore, not far from the Inlet, dwelt a Marooner, that Modeſtly call'd himſelf a Hermit, tho' he forfeited that Name by Suffering a wanton Female to cohabit with Him.

His Habitation was a Bower, cover'd with Bark after the Indian Faſhion, which in that mild Situation protected him pretty well from the Weather. Like the Ravens, he neither plow'd nor ſow'd, but Subſiſted chiefly upon Oyſters, which his Handmaid made a Shift to gather from the Adjacent Rocks. Sometimes, too, for Change of Dyet, he ſent her to drive up the Neighbour's

Cows, to moiſten their Mouths with a little Milk. But as for raiment, he depended moſtly upon his Length of Beard, and She upon her Length of Hair, part of which ſhe brought decently forward, and the reſt dangled behind quite down to her Rump, like one of Herodotus's Eaſt Indian Pigmies. 1728 March

Thus did theſe Wretches live in a dirty State of Nature, and were mere Adamites, Innocence only excepted.

This Morning the Surveyors began to run the Dividing line from the Cedar-Poſt we had driven into the Sand, allowing near 3 Degrees for the Variation. Without making this Juſt allowance, we ſhould not have obeyd his Majeſty's order in running a Due Weſt Line. It ſeems the former Commiſſioners had not been ſo exact, which gave our Friends of Carolina but too juſt an Exception to their Proceedings. 7

The Line cut Doſier's Iſland, conſiſting only of a Flat Sand, with here and there an humble Shrub growing upon it. From thence it croſt over a narrow Arm of the Sound into Knot's Iſland, and there Split a Plantation belonging to William Harding.

The Day being far ſpent, we encampt in this Man's Paſture, tho' it lay very low, and the Seaſon now inclin'd People to Aguiſh Diſtempers. He ſufferd us to cut Cedar-Branches for our Encloſure, and other Wood for Firing, to correct the moiſt Air and drive away the Damps. Our Landlady, in the Days of her Youth, it ſeems, had been a Laundreſs in the Temple, and talkt over her Adventures in that Station, with as much pleaſure as an Old Soldier talks over his Battles and Diſtempers, and I believe with as many Additions to the Truth.

The Soil is good in many Places of this Iſland, and the Extent of it pretty large. It lyes in the form of a Wedge: the South End of it is Several Miles over, but towards the North it Sharpens into a Point. It is a Plentiful Place for Stock, by reaſon of the wide Marſhes adjacent to it, and becauſe of its

1728 March warm Situation. But the Inhabitants pay a little dear for this Convenience, by loſing as much Blood in the Summer Seaſon by the infinite Number of Moſquetas, as all their Beef and Pork can recruit in the Winter.

The Sheep are as large as in Lincolnſhire, becauſe they are never pinch't by cold or Hunger. The whole Iſland was hitherto reckon'd to lye in Virginia, but now our Line has given the greater Part of it to Carolina. The Principal Freeholder here is Mr. White, who keeps open Houſe for all Travellers, that either Debt or Shipwreck happens to caſt in his way.

8 By break of Day we ſent away our Largeſt Periauga, with the Baggage, round the South end of Knot's Iſland, with Orders to the Men to wait for us in the Mouth of North River. Soon after, we embarkt ourſelves on board the ſmaller Veſſel, with Intent, if poſſible, to find a Paſſage round the North End of the Iſland.

We found this Navigation very difficult, by reaſon of the Continued Shoals, and often ſtuck faſt aground; for tho' the Sound ſpreads many miles, yet it is in moſt places extremely Shallow, and requires a Skilful Pilot to Steer even a Canoe ſafe over it. It was almoſt as hard to keep our Temper as to keep the Channel, in this provoking Situation. But the moſt impatient amongſt us ſtrokt down their Choler and ſwallow'd their curſes, leſt, if they ſuffer'd them to break out, they might ſound like Complaining, which was expreſſly forbid, as the firſt Step to Sedition.

At a diſtance we deſcry'd Several Iſlands to the Northward of us, the largeſt of which goes by the Name of Cedar Iſland. Our periauga ſtuck ſo often that we had a fair chance to be benighted in this wide Water, which muſt certainly have been our Fate, had we not luckily ſpied a Canoe that was giving a Fortune-teller a caſt from Princeſs Anne County over to North Carolina. But, as conjurers are Sometimes miſtaken, the Man miſtruſted

we were Officers of Juſtice in purſuit of a Young Wench he had carry'd off along with him. We gave the Canoe Chaſe for more than an Hour and when we came up with her, threatend to make them all priſoners unleſs they would direct us into the right Channel. 1728 March

By the Pilotage of theſe People we row'd up an Arm of the Sound, call'd the Back-Bay, till we came to the Head of it. There we were ſtoppt by a miry Pocoſon full half a Mile in Breadth, thro' which we were oblig'd to daggle on foot, plungeing now and then, tho' we pickt our Way, up to the Knees in Mud. At the End of this Charming walk we gain'd the Terra Firma of Princeſs Anne County. In that Dirty Condition we were afterwards oblig'd to foot it two Miles, as far as John Heath's Plantation, where we expected to meet the Surveyors & the men who waited upon them.

While we were performing this tedious Voyage, they had carried the Line thro' the firm Land of Knot's Iſland, where it was no more than half a Mile wide. After that they traverſ'd a large Marſh, that was exceeding Miry, and extended to an Arm of the Back Bay. They croſſt that water in a Canoe, which we had order'd round for that Purpoſe, and then waded over another Marſh, that reacht quite to the High Land of of Princeſs Anne. Both theſe Marſhes together make a breadth of five Miles, in which the Men frequently ſunk up to the Middle without muttering the leaſt complaint. On the contrary, they turn'd all theſe Diſaſters into Merriment.

It was diſcover'd, by this day's Work, that Knot's Iſland was improperly ſo call'd, being in Truth no more than a Peninſula. The N W Side of it is only divided from the Main by the great Marſh above-mentioned, which is ſeldom totally overflow'd. Inſtead of that, it might, by the Labour of a few Trenches, be drain'd into firm Meadow, capable of grazing as many cattle as Job, in his beſt Eſtate, was maſter of. In the Miry Condition

1728 March it now lies, it feeds great Numbers in the Winter, tho', when the Weather grows warm, they are driven from thence by the Mighty Armies of Moſquetas, which are the Plague of the lower Part of Carolina, as much as the Flies were formerly of Egypt, and ſome Rabbis think thoſe Flies were no other than Muſquetas.

All the People in the Neighbourhood flockt to John Heath's, to behold ſuch Rarities as they fancied us to be. The Men left their belov'd Chimney Corners, the good women their Spinning Wheels, and ſome, of more Curioſity than Ordinary, roſe out of their ſick Beds, to come and ſtare at us. They lookt upon us as a Troop of Knight Errants, who were running this great Riſque of our Lives, as they imagin'd, for the Publick Weal; and ſome of the graveſt of them queſtion'd much whether we were not all Criminals, condemned to this dirty work for Offences againſt the State.

What puzzled them moſt was, what cou'd make our men ſo very Light-hearted under ſuch intolerable Drudgery. "Ye have little reaſon to be merry, My Maſters," ſaid one of them, with a very ſolemn Face, "I fancy the Pocoſon you muſt Struggle with to-morrow will make you change your Note, and try what Metal you are made of. Ye are, to be ſure, the firſt of Human Race that ever had the Boldneſs to attempt it, and I dare ſay will be the laſt. If, therefore, you have any Worldly Goods to diſpoſe of, My Advice is that you make your Wills this very Night, for fear you die Inteſtate to-Morrow." But, alas! theſe frightfull Tales were ſo far from diſheartening the men, that they ſerv'd only to whet their Reſolution.

9 The Surveyors enter'd Early upon their Buſineſs this Morning, and ran the Line thro' Mr. Eyland's Plantation, as far as the Banks of North River. They paſſt over it in the Periauga, and landed in Gibbs' Marſh, which was a mile in Breadth, and tolerably firm. They trudg'd thro' this Marſh without much

difficulty as far as the High Land, which promiſ'd more Fertility than any they had ſeen in theſe lower Parts. But this firm Land laſted not long before they came upon the dreadful Pocoſon they had been threaten'd with. Nor did they find it one Jot better than it had been painted to them. The Beavers and Otters had render'd it quite impaſſable for any Creature but themſelves. 1728 March

Our poor Fellows had much ado to drag their Legs after them in this Quagmire, but diſdaining to be baulkt, they cou'd hardly be perſuaded from preſſing forward by the Surveyors, who found it abſolutely Neceſſary to make a Traverſe in the Deepeſt Place, to prevent their Sticking faſt in the Mire, and becoming a Certain Prey to the Turkey-Buzzards.

This Horrible Day's Work Ended two Miles to the Northward of Mr. Merchant's Plantation, divided from NW River by a Narrow Swamp, which is cauſeway'd over. We took up our Quarters in the open Field, not far from the Houſe, corcorrecting, by a Fire as large as a Roman-Funeral-Pile, the Aguiſh Exhalations ariſing from the Sunken Grounds that Surrounded us.

The Neck of Land included betwixt N River and N-Weſt River, with the adjacent Marſh, belong'd formerly to Governor Gibbs, but ſince his Deceaſe to Colonel Bladen, in right of his firſt Lady, who was Mr. Gibbs' Daughter. It would be a Valuable Tract of Land in any Country but North Carolina, where, for want of Navigation and Commerce, the beſt Eſtate affords little more than a coarſe Subſiſtence.

The Sabbath happen'd very opportunely to give ſome eaſe to our jaded People, who reſted religiouſly from every work, but that of cooking the Kettle. We obſerved very few corn-fields in our Walks, and thoſe very ſmall, which ſeem'd the Stranger to us, becauſe we could ſee no other Tokens of Huſbandry or Improvement. But, upon further Inquiry, we were given to

1728 March underſtand People only made Corn for themſelves and not for their Stocks, which know very well how to get their own Living.

Both Cattle and Hogs ramble in the Neighbouring Marſhes and Swamps, where they maintain themſelves the whole Winter long, and are not fetch'd home till the Spring. Thus theſe Indolent Wretches, during one half of the Year, loſe the Advantage of the Milk of their cattle, as well as their Dung, and many of the poor Creatures periſh in the Mire, into the Bargain, by this ill Management.

Some, who pique themſelves more upon Induſtry than their Neighbours, will, now and then, in compliment to their Cattle, cut down a Tree whoſe Limbs are loaden with the Moſs aforemention'd. The trouble wou'd be too great to Climb the Tree in order to gather this Provender, but the Shorteſt way (which in this Country is always counted the beſt) is to fell it, juſt like the Lazy Indians, who do the ſame by ſuch Trees as bear fruit, and ſo make one Harveſt for all. By this bad Huſbandry Milk is ſo Scarce, in the Winter Seaſon, that were a Big-belly'd Woman to long for it, She would loſe her Longing. And, in truth, I believe this is often the Caſe, and at the ſame time a very good reaſon why ſo many People in this Province are markt with a Cuſtard Complexion.

The only Buſineſs here is raiſing of Hogs, which is manag'd with the leaſt Trouble, and affords the Diet they are moſt fond of. The Truth of it is, the Inhabitants of N Carolina devour ſo much Swine's fleſh, that it fills them full of groſs Humours. For want too of a conſtant Supply of Salt, they are commonly obliged to eat it Freſh, and that begets the higheſt taint of Scurvy. Thus, whenever a Severe Cold happens to Conſtitutions thus Vitiated, tis apt to improve into the Yaws, called there very juſtly the country-Diſtemper. This has all the Symptoms of the Pox, with this Aggravation, that no Prepara-

tion of Mercury will touch it. Firſt it ſeizes the Throat, next the Palate, and laſtly ſhews its ſpite to the poor Noſe, of which tis apt in a ſmall time treacherouſly to undermine the Foundation. 1728 March

This Calamity is ſo common and familiar here, that it ceaſes to be a Scandal, and in the diſputes that happen about Beauty, the Noſes have in ſome Companies much ado to carry it. Nay, tis ſaid that once, after three good Pork years, a Motion had like to have been made in the Houſe of Burgeſſes, that a Man with a Noſe ſhou'd be incapable of holding any Place of Profit in the Province; which Extraordinary Motion could never have been intended without Some Hopes of a Majority.

Thus, conſidering the foul and pernicious Effects of Eating Swine's Fleſh in a hot Country, it was wiſely forbidden and made an Abomination to the Jews, who liv'd much in the ſame Latitude with Carolina.

We ordered the Surveyors early to their Buſineſs, who were bleſſt with pretty dry Grounds for three Miles together. But they paid dear for it in the next two, conſiſting of one continued frightfull Pocoſon, which no Creatures but thoſe of the amphibious kind ever had ventur'd into before. 11

This filthy Quagmire did in earneſt put the Men's Courage to a Tryal, and tho' I can't ſay it made them loſe their Patience, yet they loſt their Humour for Joking. They kept their Gravity like ſo many Spaniards, ſo that a Man might then have taken his Opportunity to plunge up to the Chin, without Danger of being laught at. However, this unuſual compoſure of countenance could not fairly be call'd complaining.

Their Day's-Work ended at the Mouth of Northern's Creek, which empties itſelf into N W River; tho' we choſe to Quarter a little higher up the River, near Moſſy Point. This we did for the Convenience of an Old houſe to Shelter our Perſons and Baggage from the rain, which threaten'd us hard. We judg'd

1728 March the thing right, for there fell an heavy ſhower in the Night, that drove the moſt hardy of us into the Houſe. Tho' indeed, our caſe was not much mended by retreating thither, becauſe that Tenement having not long before been uſ'd as a Pork-Store, the Moiſture of the Air diſſolv'd the Salt that lay Scatter'd on the Floor, and made it as wet within Doors as without. However, the Swamps and Marſhes we were lately accuſtom'd to had made ſuch Beavers and Otters of us that Nobody caught the leaſt cold.

We had encampt ſo early, that we found time in the Evening to walk near half a Mile into the Woods. There we came upon a Family of Mulattoes, that call'd themſelves free, tho' by the Shyneſs of the Maſter of the Houſe, who took care to keep leaſt in Sight, their Freedom ſeem'd a little Doubtful. It is certain many Slaves Shelter themſelves in this Obſcure Part of the World, nor will any of their righteous Neighbours diſcover them. On the Contrary, they find their Account in Settling ſuch Fugitives on ſome out-of-the-way-corner of their Land, to raiſe Stocks for a mean and inconſiderable Share, well knowing their Condition makes it Neceſſary for them to Submit to any Terms.

Nor were theſe worthy Borderers content to Shelter Runaway Slaves, but Debtors and Criminals have often met with the like Indulgence. But if the Government of North Carolina has encourag'd this unneighbourly Policy in order to increaſe their People, it is no more than what Ancient Rome did before them, which was made a City of Refuge for all Debtors and Fugitives, and from that wretched Beginning grew up in time to be Miſtreſs of a great Part of the World. And, conſidering how Fortune delights in bringing great things out of Small, who knows but Carolina may, one time or other, come to be the Seat of ſome other great Empire?

12 Every thing had been ſo ſoakt with the Rain, that we were

oblig'd to lie by a good Part of the Morning and dry them. 1728 March
However, that time was not loſt, becauſe it gave the Surveyors an opportunity of Platting off their Work, and taking the Courſe of the River. It likewiſe helpt to recruit the Spirits of the Men, who had been a little haraſſ'd with Yeſterday's March. Notwithſtanding all this, we croſſt the River before Noon, and advanc'd our Line 3 Miles. It was not poſſible to make more of it, by reaſon good Part of the way was either Marſh or Pocoſon. The Line cut two or three Plantations, leaving Part of them in Virginia, and part of them in Carolina. This was a Caſe that happen'd frequently, to the great Inconvenience of the Owners, who were therefore oblig'd to take out two Patents and Pay for a new Survey in each Government. 1681107

In the Evening we took up our Quarters in Mr. Ballance's Paſture, a little above the Bridge built over N W River. There we diſcharg'd the two Periaugas, which in truth had been very Servicable in tranſporting us over the Many Waters in that Dirty and Difficult Part of our Buſineſs.

Our Landlord had a tolerable good Houſe and Clean Furniture, and yet we cou'd not be tempted to lodge in it. We choſe rather to lye in the open Field, for fear of growing too tender. A clear Sky, ſpangled with Stars, was our Canopy, which being the laſt thing we ſaw before we fell aſleep, gave us Magnificent Dreams. The Truth of it is, we took ſo much pleaſure in that natural kind of Lodging, that I think at the foot of the Account Mankind are great Loſers by the Luxury of Feather-Beds and warm apartments.

The curioſity of beholding ſo new and withal ſo Sweet a Method of Encamping, brought one of the Senators of N Carolina to make us a Midnight Viſit. But he was ſo very Clamorous in his Commendations of it, that the Centinel, not ſeeing his Quality, either thro' his habit or Behaviour, had like to have treated him roughly.

1728 March After excuſing the Unſeaſonableneſs of his Viſit, and letting us know he was a Parliament Man, he ſwore he was ſo taken with our Lodging, that he would ſet Fire to his Houſe as ſoon as he got Home, and teach his Wife and Children to lie, like us, in the open field.

13 Early this Morning our Chaplain repair'd to us with the Men we had left at Mr. Wilſon's. We had ſent for them the Evening before to relieve thoſe who had the Labour-Oar from Corotuck-Inlet. But to our great ſurpriſe, they petition'd not to be reliev'd, hoping to gain immortal Reputation by being the firſt of Mankind that Ventur'd thro' the great Diſmal. But the reſt being equally Ambitious of the ſame Honour, it was but fair to decide their Pretenſions by Lot. After Fortune had declar'd herſelf, thoſe which ſhe had excluded offer'd Money to the Happy Perſons to go in their Stead. But Hercules would have as ſoon ſold the Glory of cleanſing the Augean Stables, which was pretty near the ſame Sort of Work.

No ſooner was the Controverſy at an end, but we ſent them unfortunate Fellows back to their Quarters, whom Chance had Condemn'd to remain upon Firm Land and Sleep in a whole Skin. In the mean while the Surveyors carry'd the Line 3 Miles, which was no Contemptible day's work, conſidering how cruelly they were entangled with Bryars and Gall Buſhes. The Leaf of this laſt Shrub beſpeaks it to be of the Alaternus Family.

Our Work ended within a Quarter of a Mile of the Diſmal above-mention'd, where the Ground began to be already full of Sunken Holes and Slaſhes, which had, here and there, ſome few Reeds growing in them.

Tis hardly credible how little the Bordering inhabitants were acquainted with this mighty Swamp, notwithſtanding they had liv'd their whole lives within Smell of it. Yet, as great Strangers as they were to it, they pretended to be very exact in their Account of its Demenſions, and were poſitive it could not be

above 7 or 8 Miles wide, but knew no more of the Matter than Star-gazers know of the Diſtance of the Fixt Stars. At the Same time, they were Simple enough to amuſe our Men with Idle Stories of the Lyons, Panthers and Alligators, they were like to encounter in that dreadful Place. 1728 March

In ſhort, we ſaw plainly there was no Intelligence of this Terra Incognita to be got, but from our own Experience. For that Reaſon it was reſolv'd to make the requiſite Diſpoſitions to enter it next Morning. We allotted every one of the Surveyors for this painful Enterpriſe, with 12 Men to attend them. Fewer than that cou'd not be employ'd in clearing the way, carrying the Chain, marking the Trees, and bearing the neceſſary Bedding and Proviſions. Nor wou'd the Commiſſioners themſelves have Spared their Perſons on this Occaſion, but for fear of adding to the poor men's Burthen, while they were certain they cou'd add nothing to their Reſolution.

We quarter'd with our Friend and Fellow Traveller, William Wilkins, who had been our faithful Pilot to Coratuck, and liv'd about a mile from the Place where the Line ended. Every thing lookt ſo very clean, and the Furniture ſo neat, that we were tempted to Lodge within Doors. But the Novelty of being ſhut up ſo cloſe quite ſpoil'd our reſt, nor did we breathe ſo free by abundance, as when we lay in the open Air.

Before nine of the Clock this Morning, the Proviſions, Bedding and other Neceſſaries, were made up into Packs for the Men to carry on their Shoulders into the Diſmal. They were victuall'd for 8 days at full Allowance, Nobody doubting but that wou'd be abundantly Sufficient to carry them thro' that Inhoſpitable Place; nor Indeed was it poſſible for the Poor Fellows to Stagger under more. As it was, their Loads weigh'd from 60 to 70 Pounds, in juſt Proportion to the Strength of thoſe who were to bear them. 14

Twou'd have been unconſcionable to have Saddled them with

1728 March Burthens heavier than that, when they were to lugg them thro' a filthy Bogg, which was hardly practicable with no Burthen at all.

Beſides this Luggage at their Backs, they were oblig'd to meaſure the diſtance, mark the Trees, and clear the way for the Surveyors every Step they went. It was really a Pleaſure to ſee with how much Cheerfulneſs they undertook, and with how much Spirit they went thro' all this Drudgery. For their Greater Safety, the Commiſſioners took care to furniſh them with Peruvian-Bark, Rhubarb and Hipocoacanah, in caſe they might happen, in that wet Journey, to be taken with fevers or Fluxes.

Altho' there was no need of Example to inflame Perſons already ſo cheerful, yet to enter the People with the better grace, the Author and two more of the Commiſſioners accompanied them half a Mile into the Diſmal. The Skirts of it were thinly Planted with Dwarf Reeds and Gall-Buſhes, but when we got into the Diſmal itſelf, we found the Reeds grew there much taller and cloſer, and, to mend the matter was ſo interlac'd with bamboe-briars, that there was no ſcuffling thro' them without the help of Pioneers. At the ſame time, we found the Ground moiſt and trembling under our feet like a Quagmire, inſomuch that it was an eaſy Matter to run a Ten-Foot-Pole up to the Head in it, without exerting any uncommon Strength to do it.

Two of the Men, whoſe Burthens were the leaſt cumberſome, had orders to march before, with their Tomahawks, and clear the way, in order to make an Opening for the Surveyors. By their Aſſiſtance we made a Shift to puſh the Line half a Mile in 3 Hours, and then reacht a ſmall piece of firm Land, about 100 Yards wide, Standing up above the reſt like an Iſland. Here the people were glad to lay down their Loads and take a little refreſhment, while the happy man, whoſe lot it was to carry the

Jugg of Rum, began already, like Æſop's Bread-Carriers, to find it grow a good deal lighter. 1728 March

After repoſing about an Hour, the Commiſſioners recommended Vigour and Conſtancy to their Fellow-Travellers, by whom they were anſwer'd with 3 Cheerful Huzzas, in Token of Obedience. This Ceremony was no ſooner over but they took up their Burthens and attended the Motion of the Surveyors, who, tho' they workt with all their might, could reach but one Mile farther, the ſame obſtacles ſtill attending them which they had met with in the Morning.

However ſmall this diſtance may ſeem to ſuch as are uſ'd to travel at their Eaſe, yet our Poor Men, who were oblig'd to work with an unwieldy Load at their Backs, had reaſon to think it a long way; Eſpecially in a Bogg where they had no firm Footing, but every Step made a deep Impreſſion, which was inſtantly fill'd with Water. At the ſame time they were labouring with their Hands to cut down the Reeds, which were Ten-feet high, their Legs were hampered with the Bryars. Beſides, the Weather happen'd to be warm, and the tallneſs of the Reeds kept off every Friendly Breeze from coming to refreſh them. And, indeed, it was a little provoking to hear the Wind whiſtling among the Branches of the White Cedars, which grew here and there amongſt the Reeds, and at the ſame time not have the Comfort to feel the leaſt Breath of it.

In the mean time the 3 Commiſſioners return'd out of the Diſmal the ſame way they went in, and, having join'd their Brethren, proceeded that Night as far as Mr. Wilſon's.

This worthy Perſon lives within ſight of the Diſmal, in the Skirts whereof his Stocks range and Maintain themſelves all the Winter, and yet he knew as little of it as he did of Terra Auſtralis Incognita. He told us a Canterbury Tale of a North Briton, whoſe Curioſity Spurr'd him a long way into this great Deſart, as he call'd it, near 20 Years ago, but he having no

1728 March Compaſs, nor ſeeing the Sun for ſeveral Days Together, wander'd about till he was almoſt famiſht; but at laſt he bethought himſelf of a Secret his Countrymen make uſe of to Pilot themſelves in a Dark day.

He took a fat Louſe out of his Collar, and expoſ'd it to the open day on a Piece of White Paper, which he brought along with him for his Journal. The poor Inſect having no Eye-lids, turn'd himſelf about till he found the Darkeſt Part of the Heavens, and ſo made the beſt of his way towards the North. By this Direction he Steer'd himſelf Safe out, and gave ſuch a frightful account of the Monſters he ſaw, and the Diſtreſſes he underwent, that no mortall Since has been hardy enough to go upon the like dangerous Diſcovery.

15 The Surveyors purſued their work with all Diligence, but Still found the Soil of the Diſmal ſo Spongy that the Water ouzed up into every footſtep they took. To their Sorrow, too, they found the Reeds and Bryars more firmly interwoven than than they did the day before. But the greateſt Grievance was from large Cypreſſes, which the Wind had blown down and heap'd upon one another. On the Limbs of moſt of them grew Sharp Snags, Pointing every way like ſo many Pikes, that requir'd much Pains and Caution to avoid.

Theſe Trees being Evergreens, and Shooting their Large Tops Very high, are eaſily overſet by every Guſt of Wind, becauſe there is no firm Earth to Steddy their Roots. Thus many of them were laid proſtrate to the great Encumbrance of the way. Such Variety of Difficulties made the Buſineſs go on heavily, inſomuch that, from Morning till Night, the Line could advance no farther than 1 mile and 31 Poles. Never was Rum, that cordial of Life, found more neceſſary than it was in this Dirty Place. It did not only recruit the People's Spirits, now almoſt Jaded with Fatigue, but ſerv'd to correct the Badneſs of the Water, and at the ſame time to reſiſt the Malignity of the

Air. Whenever the Men wanted to drink, which was very often, they had nothing more to do but to make a Hole, and the Water bubbled up in a Moment. But it was far from being either clear or well tafted, and had befides a Phyfical Effect, from the Tincture it receiv'd from the Roots of the Shrubbs and Trees that grew in the Neighbourhood. 1728 March

While the Surveyors were thus painfully employ'd, the Commiffioners difcharged the long Score they had with Mr. Wilfon, for the Men and Horfes which had been quarter'd upon him during our Expedition to Coratuck. From thence we march'd in good Order along the Eaft Side of the Difmal, and paft the long Bridge that lies over the South Branch of Elizabeth River. At the End of 18 Miles we reacht Timothy Ivy's Plantation, where we pitcht our Tent for the firft Time, and were furnifht with every thing the Place afforded.

We perceiv'd the happy Effects of Induftry in this Family, in which every one lookt tidy and clean, and carri'd in their countenances the chearful Marks of Plenty. We faw no Drones there, which are but too Common, alas, in that Part of the World. Tho', in truth, the Diftemper of Lazinefs feizes the Men oftener much than the Women. Thefe laft Spin, weave and knit, all with their own Hands, while their Hufbands, depending on the Bounty of the Climate, are Sloathfull in every thing but getting of Children, and in that only Inftance make themfelves ufeful Members of an Infant-Colony.

There is but little Wool in that Province, tho' Cotton grows very kindly, and, fo far South, is Seldom nippt by the Froft. The Good Women mix this with their Wool for their outer Garments; tho', for want of Fulling, that kind of Manufacture is Open and Sleazy. Flax likewife thrives there extreamly, being perhaps as fine as any in the World, and I queftion not might, with a little care, and pains, be brought to rival that of

1728 March 16 Egypt; and yet the Men are here ſo intolerable Lazy, they ſeldom take the trouble to propagate it.

The Line was this day carry'd one Mile and half and 16 Poles. The Soil continued ſoft and Miry, but fuller of Trees, eſpecially White cedars. Many of theſe too were thrown down and piled in Heaps, high enough for a good Muſcovite Fortification. The worſt of it was, the Poor Fellows began now to be troubled with Fluxes, occaſion'd by bad Water and moiſt Lodging: but chewing of Rhubarb kept that Malady within Bounds.

In the mean time the Commiſſioners decampt early in the Morning, and made a March of 25 Miles, as far as Mr. Andrew Mead's, who lives upon Nanſimand River. They were no ſooner got under the Shelter of that Hoſpitable Roof, but it began to rain hard, and continued ſo to do great part of the Night. This gave them much Pain for their Friends in the Diſmal, whoſe ſufferings ſpoilt their Taſt for the good Chear, wherewith they were entertain'd themſelves.

However, late that Evening, theſe poor Men had the Fortune to come upon another Terra-firma, which was the Luckyer for them, becauſe the Lower ground, by the rain that fell, was made a fitter Lodging for Tadpoles than men.

In our Journey we remarkt that the North Side of this great Swamp lies higher than either the Eaſt or the Weſt, nor were the approaches to it ſo full of Sunken Grounds. We paſſt by no leſs than two Quaker Meeting Houſes, one of which had an Awkward Ornament on the Weſt End of it, that ſeem'd to Ape a Steeple. I muſt own I expected no ſuch Piece of Foppery from a Sect of ſo much outſide Simplicity.

That perſuaſion prevails much in the lower end of Nanſimond county, for want of Miniſters to Pilot the People a decenter way to Heaven.

The ill Reputation of Tobacco planted in thoſe lower Pariſhes makes the Clergy unwilling to accept of them, unleſs it be ſuch

whoſe abilities are as mean as their Pay. Thus, whether the Churches be quite void or but indifferently filled, the Quakers will have an Opportunity of gaining Proſelytes. Tis a wonder no Popiſh Miſſionaries are ſent from Maryland to labour in this Neglected Vineyard, who we know have Zeal enough to traverſe Sea and Land on the Meritorious Errand of making converts. 1728 March

Nor is it leſs Strange that ſome Wolf in Sheep's cloathing arrives not from New England to lead aſtray a Flock that has no ſhepherd. People uninſtructed in any Religion are ready to embrace the firſt that offers. Tis natural for helpleſs man to adore his Maker in Some Form or other, and were there any exception to this Rule, I ſhould ſuſpect it to be among the Hottentots of the Cape of Good-Hope and of North Carolina.

There fell a great deal of Rain in the Night, accompany'd with a Strong Wind. The fellow-feeling we had for the poor Diſmalites, on Account of this unkind Weather, render'd the Down we laid upon uneaſy. We fancy'd them half-drown'd in their Wet Lodging, with the Trees blowing down about their Ears. Theſe Were the Gloomy Images our Fears Suggeſted; tho' twas ſo much uneaſineſs clear gain. They happen'd to come of much better, by being luckily encampt on the dry piece of Ground afore-mention'd.

They were, however, forct to keep the Sabbath in Spite of 17
their Teeth, contrary to the Diſpenſation our good Chaplain had given them. Indeed, their Short allowance of Proviſion would have juſtify'd their making the beſt of their way, without Diſtinction of days. Twas certainly a Work both of Neceſſity and Self-preſervation, to ſave themſelves from Starving. Nevertheleſs, the hard Rain had made every thing ſo thoroughly wet, that it was quite impoſſible to do any Buſineſs. They therefore made a vertue of what they could not help, and contentedly reſted in their dry Situation.

1728 March Since the Surveyors had enter'd the Diſmal, they had laid Eyes on no living Creature: neither Bird nor Beaſt, Inſect nor Reptile came in View. Doubtleſs, the Eternal Shade that broods over this mighty Bog, and hinders the ſun-beams from bleſſing the Ground, makes it an uncomfortable Habitation for any thing that has life. Not ſo much as a Zealand Frog cou'd endure ſo Aguiſh a Situation.

It had one Beauty, however, that delighted the Eye, tho' at the Expenſe of all the other Senſes: the Moiſture of the Soil preſerves a continual Verdure, and makes every Plant an Evergreen, but at the ſame time the foul Damps aſcend without ceaſing, corrupt the Air, and render it unfit for Reſpiration. Not even a Turkey-Buzzard will venture to fly over it, no more than the Italian Vultures will over the filthy Lake Avernus, or the Birds in the Holy-Land over the Salt Sea, where Sodom and Gomorrah formerly ſtood.

In theſe ſad Circumſtances, the kindeſt thing we cou'd do for our Suffering Friends was to give them a place in the Litany. Our Chaplain, for his Part, did his Office, and rubb'd us up with a Seaſonable Sermon. This was quite a new thing to our Brethren of North Carolina, who live in a climate where no clergyman can Breathe, any more than Spiders in Ireland.

For want of men in Holy Orders, both the Members of the Council and Juſtices of the Peace are empower'd by the Laws of that Country to marry all thoſe who will not take One another's Word; but for the ceremony of Chriſtening their children, they truſt that to chance. If a Parſon come in their way, they will crave a Caſt of his office, as they call it, elſe they are content their Offspring ſhould remain as Arrant Pagans as themſelves. They account it among their greateſt advantages that they are not Prieſt-ridden, not remembering that the Clergy is rarely guilty of Beſtriding ſuch as have the misfortune to be poor.

One thing may be ſaid for the Inhabitants of that Province,

that they are not troubled with any Religious Fumes, and have the leaſt Superſtition of any People living. They do not know Sunday from any other day, any more than Robinſon Cruſo did, which would give them a great Advantage were they given to be induſtrious. But they keep ſo many Sabbaths every week, that their diſregard of the Seventh Day has no manner of cruelty in it, either to Servants or Cattle. 1728 March

It was with ſome difficulty we cou'd make our People quit the good chear they met with at this Houſe, ſo it was late before we took our Departure; but to make us amends, our Landlord was ſo good as to conduct us Ten Miles on our Way, as far as the Cypreſs Swamp, which drains itſelf into the Diſmal. Eight Miles beyond that we forded the Waters of Coropeak, which tend the ſame way as do many others on that ſide. In Six Miles more we reacht the Plantation of Mr. Thomas Spight, a Grandee of N Carolina. We found the good Man upon his Crutches, being crippled with the Gout in both his Knees. Here we flatter'd ourſelves we ſhould by this time meet with good Tydings of the Surveyors, but had reckon'd, alas! without our Hoſt: on the Contrary, we were told the Diſmal was at leaſt Thirty Miles wide in that Place. However, as nobody could ſay this on his own Knowledge, we Order'd Guns to be fired and a Drum to be beaten, but receiv'd no Anſwer, unleſs it was from that prating Nymph Echo, who, like a loquacious Wife, will always have the laſt Word, and Sometimes return three for one.

It was indeed no Wonder our Signal was not heard at that time, by the People in the Diſmal, becauſe, in Truth, they had not then penetrated one Third of their way. They had that Morning fallen to work with great Vigour; and, finding the Ground better than Ordinary, drove on the Line 2 Miles and 38 poles. This was reckon'd an Herculean day's Work, and yet they would not have Stopp'd there, had not an impenetrable 18

1728 March cedar Thicket checkt their Induſtry. Our Landlord had ſeated Himſelf on the Borders of this Diſmal, for the Advantage of the Green Food His Cattle find there all Winter, and for the Rooting that Supports His Hogs. This, I own, is ſome convenience to his Purſe, for which his whole Family pay dear in their Perſons, for they are devoured by muſketas all the Summer, and have Agues every Spring and Fall, which Corrupt all the Juices of their Bodies, give them a cadaverous complexion, and beſides a lazy, creeping Habit, which they never get rid of.

19 We Ordered Several Men to Patrole on the Edge of the Diſmal, both towards the North and towards the South, and to fire Guns at proper Diſtances. This they perform'd very punctually, but cou'd hear nothing in return, nor gain any Sort of Intelligence. In the mean time whole Flocks of Women and Children flew hither to Stare at us, with as much curioſity as if we had lately Landed from Bantam or Morocco.

Some Borderers, too, had a great Mind to know where the Line wou'd come out, being for the moſt part Apprehenſive leſt their Lands Should be taken into Virginia. In that caſe they muſt have ſubmitted to ſome Sort of Order and Government; whereas, in N Carolina, every One does what ſeems beſt in his own Eyes. There were ſome good Women that brought their children to be Baptiz'd, but brought no Capons along with them to make the ſolemnity cheerful. In the mean time it was Strange that none came to be marry'd in ſuch a Multitude, if it had only been for the Novelty of having their Hands Joyn'd by one in Holy Orders. Yet ſo it was, that tho' our chaplain Chriſten'd above an Hundred, he did not marry ſo much as one Couple dureing the whole Expedition. But marriage is reckon'd a Lay contract in Carolina, as I ſaid before, and a Country Juſtice can tie the fatal Knot there, as faſt as an Arch-Biſhop.

None of our Viſiters could, however, tell us any News of the

Surveyors, nor Indeed was it poſſible any of them ſhou'd at that time, They being ſtill laboring in the Midſt of the Diſmal. 1728 March

It ſeems they were able to carry the Line this Day no further than one mile and 61 Poles, and that whole diſtance was thro' a Miry cedar Bogg, where the ground trembled under their Feet moſt frightfully. In many places too their Paſſage was retarded by a great number of fallen Trees, that lay Horſing upon one Another.

Tho' many circumſtances concurr'd to make this an unwholeſome Situation, yet the Poor men had no time to be ſick, nor can one conceive a more Calamitous Caſe than it would have been to be laid up in that uncomfortable Quagmire. Never were Patients more tractable, or willing to take Phyſick, than theſe honeſt Fellows; but it was from a Dread of laying their Bones in a Bogg that wou'd ſoon ſpew them up again. That Conſideration alſo put them upon more caution about their Lodging.

They firſt cover'd the Ground with Square Pieces of Cypreſs bark, which now, in the Spring, they cou'd eaſily Slip off the Tree for that purpoſe. On this they Spread their Bedding; but unhappily the Weight and Warmth of their Bodies made the Water riſe up betwixt the Joints of the Bark, to their great Inconvenience. Thus they lay not only moiſt, but alſo exceedingly cold, becauſe their Fires were continually going out. For no ſooner was the Traſh upon the Surface burnt away, but immediately the Fire was extinguiſht by the Moiſture of the Soil, Inſomuch that it was great part of the Centinel's Buſineſs to rekindle it again in a Freſh Place, every Quarter of an Hour. Nor cou'd they indeed do their duty better, becauſe Cold was theonly Enemy they had to Guard againſt in a miſerable Moraſs, where nothing can inhabit.

We could get no Tidings yet of our Brave Adventurers, notwithſtanding we deſpatcht men to the likelieſt Stations to en- 20

1728 March quire after them. They were ſtill Scuffleing in the Mire, and could not Poſſibly forward the Line this whole day more than one Mile and 64 Chains. Every Step of this Day's Work was thro' a cedar Bog, where the Trees were ſomewhat Smaller and grew more into a Thicket. It was now a great Misfortune to the Men to find their Proviſions grow leſs as their Labour grew greater; They were all forct to come to ſhort Allowance, and conſequently to work hard without filling their Bellies. Tho' this was very ſevere upon Engliſh Stomachs, yet the People were ſo far from being diſcomfited at it, that they ſtill kept up their good Humour, and merrily told a young Fellow in the Company, who lookt very Plump and Wholeſome, that he muſt expect to go firſt to Pot, if matters ſhou'd come to Extremity.

This was only ſaid by way of Jeſt, yet it made Him thoughtful in earneſt. However, for the Preſent he return'd them a very civil anſwer, letting them know that, dead or alive, he ſhou'd be glad to be uſeful to ſuch worthy good Friends. But, after all, this Humorous Saying had one very good Effect, for that younker, who before was a little enclin'd by his Conſtitution to be lazy, grew on a Sudden Extreamly Induſtrious, that ſo there might be leſs Occaſion to carbonade him for the good of his Fellow-Travellers.

While our Friends were thus embarraſſt in the Diſmal, the Commiſſioners began to ly under great uneaſineſs for them. They knew very well their Proviſions muſt by this time begin to fall Short, nor cou'd they conceive any likely means of a Supply. At this time of the Year both the Cattle and Hoggs had forſaken the Skirts of the Diſmal, invited by the Springing Graſs on the firm Land. All our hopes were that Providence wou'd cauſe ſome Wild Game to fall in their way, or elſe direct them to a wholeſome Vegetable for Subſiſtence. In Short they were haunted with ſo many Frights on this Occaſion, that they

were in truth more uneaſy than the Perſons whoſe Caſe they lamented. 1728 March

We had ſeveral Viſiters from Edenton, in the Afternoon, that came with Mr. Gale, who had prudently left us at Corotuck, to Scuffle thro' that dirty Country by our Selves. Theſe Gentlemen, having good Noſes, had ſmelt out, at 30 Miles' Diſtance, the Precious Liquor, with which the Liberality of our good Friend Mr. Mead had juſt before Supply'd us. That generous Perſon had judg'd very right, that we were now got out of the Latitude of Drink proper for men in Affliction, and therefore was ſo good as to ſend his Cart loaden with all ſorts of refreſhments, for which the Commiſſioners return'd Him their Thanks, and the Chaplain His Bleſſing.

The Surveyors and their Attendants began now in good 21
Earneſt to be alarm'd with Apprehenſions of Famine, nor could they forbear looking with Some Sort of Appetite upon a dog that had been the faithful Companion of their Travels.

Their Proviſions were now near exhauſted. They had this Morning made the laſt Diſtribution, that ſo each might Huſband his ſmall Pittance as he pleaſ'd. Now it was that the freſh Colour'd Young Man began to tremble every Joint of Him, having dreamed, the Night before, that the Indians were about to Barbacue him over live coals.

The Proſpect of Famine determin'd the People, at laſt, with one conſent, to abandon the Line for the Preſent, which advanced but ſlowly, and make the beſt of their way to firm Land. Accordingly they ſat off very early, and, by the help of the Compaſs which they carried along with them, Steer'd a direct Weſtwardly Courſe. They marcht from Morning till Night, and Computed their Journey to amount to about 4 Miles, which was a great way, conſidering the difficulties of the Ground. It was all along a Cedar-Swamp, ſo dirty and perplext, that if they

1728 March had not travell'd for their Lives, they cou'd not have reacht ſo far.

On their way they eſpied a Turkey-Buzzard, that flew prodigiouſly high to get above the Noiſome Exhalations that aſcend from that filthy place.[1] This they were willing to underſtand as a good Omen, according to the Superſtition of the Ancients, who had great Faith in the Flight of Vultures. However, after all this tedious Journey, they could yet diſcover no End of their toil, which made them very penſive, eſpecially after they had eat the laſt Morſel of their Proviſions. But to their unſpeakable comfort, when all was huſht in the Evening, they heard the Cattle low, and the Dogs bark, very diſtinctly, which, to Men in that diſtreſs, was more delightful Muſic than Fauſtina or Farinelli cou'd have made. In the mean time the Commiſſioners could get no News of them from any of their Viſiters, who Aſſembled from every Point of the Compaſs.

But the good Landlord had Viſiters of another kind while we were there, that is to ſay, ſome induſtrious Maſters of Ships, that lay in Nanſimond River. Theſe worthy Commanders came to beſpeak Tobacco from theſe Parts to make up their Loadings, in Contempt of the Virginia Law, which Poſitively forbad their taking in any made in North Carolina. Nor was this Reſtraint at all unreaſonable; becauſe they have no Law in Carolina, either to mend the Quality or leſſen the quantity of Tobacco, or ſo much as to prevent the turning out of Seconds, all which caſes have been provided againſt by the Laws of Virginia.[2] Wherefore, there can be no reaſon why the Inhabitants of that Province Shou'd have the ſame Advantage of Shipping their Tobacco in our Parts, when they will by no means ſubmit to the ſame Reſtrictions that we do.

22 Our Patrole happen'd not to go far enough to the Northward

[1] Buzzards cannot ſmell.

[2] See Jones's *Virginia*, 1724, and Hening's *Statutes*.

this Morning, if they had, the People in the Diſmal might have heard the Report of their Guns. For this Reaſon they return'd without any Tydings, which threw us into a great tho' unneceſſary Perplexity. This was now the Ninth day ſince they enter'd into that inhoſpitable Swamp, and conſequently we had reaſon to believe their Proviſions were quite Spent. 1728 March

We knew they workt hard, and therefore would eat heartily, ſo long as they had wherewithal to recruit their Spirits, not imagining the Swamp ſo wide as they found it. Had we been able to gueſs where the Line wou'd come out, we wou'd have ſent men to meet them with a freſh Supply; but as we cou'd know nothing of that, and as we had neither Compaſs nor Surveyor to guide a Meſſenger on ſuch an Errand, we were unwilling to expoſe him to no Purpoſe; Therefore, all we were able to do for them, in ſo great an Extremity, was to recommend them to a Merciful Providence.

However long we might think the time, yet we were cautious of Shewing our uneaſineſs, for fear of Mortifying our Landlord. He had Done his beſt for us, and therefore we were unwilling he ſhould think us diſſatisfy'd with our Entertainment. In the midſt of our concern, we were moſt agreeably ſurpriz'd, juſt after Dinner, with the News that the Diſmalites were all Safe. Theſe bleſſed Tidings were brought to us by Mr. Swan, the Carolina-Surveyor, who came to us in a very tatter'd condition.

After very Short Salutations, we got about Him as if He had been a Hottentot, and began to Inquire into his Adventures. He gave us a Detail of their uncomfortable Voyage thro' the Diſmal, and told us, particularly, they had purſued their Journey early that Morning, encouraged by the good Omen of ſeeing the Crows fly over their Heads; that, after an Hour's march over very Rotten Ground, they, on a Sudden, began to find themſelves among tall Pines, that grew in the Water, which in many Places was Knee-deep. This Pine Swamp, into which that of

1728 March Coropeak drain'd itſelf, extended near a Mile in Breadth; and tho' it was exceedingly wet, yet it was much harder at Bottom than the reſt of the Swamp; that about Ten in the Morning, they recovered firm Land, which they embraced with as much Pleaſure as Shipwreckt Wretches do the ſhoar.

After theſe honeſt adventurers had congratulated each other's Deliverance, their firſt Inquiry was for a good Houſe, where they might Satisfy the Importunity of their Stomachs. Their good Genius directed them to Mr. Brinkley's, who dwells a little to the Southward of the Line. This Man began immediately to be very inquiſitive, but they declar'd they had no Spirits to anſwer Queſtions till after Dinner.

"But pray, Gentlemen," ſaid he, "anſwer me One Queſtion at leaſt: what ſhall we get for your Dinner?" To which they replied, "No Matter what, provided it be but Enough." He kindly ſupply'd their Wants as ſoon as poſſible, and by the Strength of that Refreſhment they made a Shift to come to us in the Evening, to tell their own Story. They all lookt very thin, and as ragged as the Gibeonite Ambaſſadors did in the days of Yore. Our Surveyors told us they had meaſur'd Ten Miles in the Diſmal, and Computed the Diſtance they had Marcht ſince to amount to about five more, So they made the whole Breadth to be 15 Miles in all.

23 It was very reaſonable that the Surveyors, and the men who had been Sharers in their Fatigue, ſhould now have a little Reſt. They were all, except one, in good Health and good heart, bleſſed be God! notwithſtanding the dreadful Hardſhips they had gone through. It was really a Pleaſure to ſee the Chearfulneſs wherewith they receiv'd the Order to prepare to re-enter the Diſmal on the Monday following, in order to continue the Line from the place where they had left off meaſuring, that ſo we might have the Exact Breadth of that Dirty Place. There were no more than two of them that cou'd be perſwaded to be

reliev'd on this Occaſion, or Suffer the other men to Share the Credit of that bold Undertaking, Neither wou'd theſe have Suffer'd it had not one of them been very lame, and the Other much Indiſpoſ'd. 1728 March

By the Deſcription the Surveyors gave of the Diſmal, we were convinc'd that nothing but the Exceeding dry Seaſon we had been bleſſ'd with cou'd have made the paſſing of it practicable. It is the Source of no leſs than five Several Rivers which diſcharge themſelves Southward into Albermarle Sound, and of two that run northerly into Virginia. From thence tis eaſy to imagine that the Soil muſt be thoroughly Soakt with Water, or elſe there muſt be plentiful Stores of it under Ground; to ſupply ſo many Rivers; eſpecially ſince there is no Lake, or any conſiderable Body of that Element to be ſeen on the Surface.[1] The Rivers that Head in it from Virginia are the South Branch of Nanſimond, and the Weſt Branch of Elizabeth; and thoſe from Carolina are North-weſt River, North River, Paſquetank, Little River, and Pequimons.

There is one remarkable part of the Diſmal, lying to the ſouth of the Line, that has few or no Trees growing on it, but contains a large Tract of tall Reeds. Theſe being green all the Year round, and waveing with every Wind, have procur'd it the Name of the Green Sea.

We are not yet acquainted with the preciſe Extent of the Diſmal, the whole haveing never been Survey'd; but it may be Computed at a Medium to be about 30 Miles long and 10 Miles broad, tho' where the line croſt it, twas compleatly 15 Miles wide. But it ſeems to grow Narrower towards the North, or at leaſt does ſo in many Places. The Exhalations that continually riſe from this vaſt Body of mire and Naſtineſs infect the Air for many Miles round, and render it very unwholeſome for the

[1] Lake Drummond.

1728 March Bordering Inhabitants. It makes them liable to Agues, Pleuriſies, and many other Diſtempers, that kill abundance of People, and make the reſt look no better than Ghoſts. It wou'd require a great Sum of Money to drain it, but the Publick Treaſure cou'd not be better beſtow'd, than to preſerve the Lives of his Majeſty's Liege People, and at the ſame time render ſo great a Tract of ſwamp very Profitable, beſides the advantage of making a Channel to tranſport by water-carriage goods from Albermarle Sound into Nanſimond and Elizabeth Rivers, in Virginia.

24 This being Sunday, we had a Numerous congregation, which flockt to our Quarters from all the adjacent Country. The News that our Surveyors were come out of the Diſmal, increaſ'd the Number very much, becauſe it wou'd give them an Opportunity of gueſſing, at leaſt, whereabouts the Line wou'd cut, whereby they might form Some Judgment whether they belong'd to Virginia or Carolina. Thoſe who had taken up Land within the Diſputed Bounds were in great pain leſt it ſhould be found to ly in Virginia; becauſe this being done contrary to an Expreſs Order of that government, the Patentees had great reaſon to fear they ſhould in that caſe have loſt their land. But their Apprehenſions were now at an end, when they underſtood that all the Territory which had been controverted was like to be left in Carolina.

In the afternoon, thoſe who were to re-enter the Diſmal were furniſht with the Neceſſary Proviſions, and Order'd to repair the Over-Night to their Landlord, Peter Brinkley's, that they might be ready to begin their Buſineſs early on Monday Morning. Mr. Irvin was excuſ'd from the Fatigue, in complement to his Lungs; but Mr. Mayo and Mr. Swan were Robuſt enough to return upon that painful Service, and, to do them Juſtice, they went with great Alacrity. The Truth was, they now

knew the worſt of it; and cou'd gueſs pretty near at the time when they might hope to return to Land again. 1729[1] March 25

The Air was chill'd this Morning with a Smart North-weſt Wind, which favour'd the Diſmalites in their Dirty March. They return'd by the Path they had made in coming out, and with great Induſtry arriv'd in the Evening at the Spot where the Line had been diſcontinued.

After ſo long and laborious a Journey, they were glad to repoſe themſelves on their couches of Cypreſs-bark, where their ſleep was as ſweet as it wou'd have been on a Bed of Finland Down.

In the mean time, we who ſtay'd behind had nothing to do, but to make the beſt obſervations we cou'd upon that Part of the Country. The Soil of our Landlord's Plantation, tho' none of the beſt, ſeem'd more fertile than any thereabouts, where the Ground is near as Sandy as the Deſarts of Affrica, and conſequently barren. The Road leading from thence to Edenton, being in diſtance about 27 Miles, lies upon a Ridge call'd Sandy-Ridge, which is ſo wretchedly Poor that it will not bring Potatoes.

The Pines in this Part of the country are of a different Species from thoſe that grow in Virginia: their bearded Leaves are much longer and their Cones much larger.[2] Each Cell contains a Seed of the Size and Figure of a black-ey'd Pea, which, Shedding in November, is very good Maſt for Hogs, and fattens them in a Short time.

The Smalleſt of theſe Pines are full of Cones, which are 8 or 9 Inches long, and each affords commonly 60 or 70 Seeds. This Kind of Maſt has the Advantage of all other, by being more conſtant, and leſs liable to be nippt by the Froſt, or Eaten

[1] 1729 in manuſcript.

[2] See Cones.

1729 March by the Caterpillars. The Trees alſo abound more with Turpentine, and conſequently yield more Tarr, than either the Yellow or the White Pine; And for the ſame reaſon make more durable Timber for building. The Inhabitants hereabouts pick up Knots of Lightwood in Abundance, which they burn into tar, and then carry it to Norfolk or Nanſimond for a Market. The Tar made in this method is the leſs Valuable, becauſe it is ſaid to burn the Cordage, tho' it is full as good for all other uſes, as that made in Sweden and Muſcovy.

Surely there is no place in the World where the Inhabitants live with leſs Labour than in N Carolina. It approaches nearer to the Deſcription of Lubberland than any other, by the great felicity of the Climate, the eaſineſs of raiſing Proviſions, and the Slothfulneſs of the People.

Indian Corn is of ſo great increaſe, that a little Pains will Subſiſt a very large Family with Bread, and then they may have meat without any pains at all, by the Help of the Low Grounds, and the great Variety of Maſt that grows on the High-land. The Men, for their Parts, juſt like the Indians, impoſe all the Work upon the poor Women. They make their Wives riſe out of their Beds early in the Morning, at the ſame time that they lye and Snore, till the Sun has run one third of his courſe, and diſperſt all the unwholeſome Damps. Then, after Stretching and Yawning for half an Hour, they light their Pipes, and, under the Protection of a cloud of Smoak, venture out into the open Air; tho', if it happens to be never ſo little cold, they quickly return Shivering into the Chimney corner. When the Weather is mild, they ſtand leaning with both their arms upon the corn-field fence, and gravely conſider whether they had beſt go and take a Small Heat at the Hough: but generally find reaſons to put it off till another time.

Thus they loiter away their Lives, like Solomon's Sluggard,

with their Arms acroſs, and at the Winding up of the Year Scarcely have Bread to Eat. 1729 March

To ſpeak the Truth, tis a thorough Averſion to Labor that makes People file off to N Carolina, where Plenty and a Warm Sun confirm them in their Diſpoſition to Lazineſs for their whole Lives.

Since we were like to be confin'd to this place, till the People 26 return'd out of the Diſmal, twas agreed that our Chaplain might Safely take a turn to Edenton, to preach the Goſpel to the Infidels there, and Chriſten their Children. He was accompany'd thither by Mr. Little, One of the Carolina Commiſſioners, who, to ſhew his regard for the Church, offer'd to treat Him on the Road with a Fricaſſee of Rum. They fry'd half a Dozen Raſhers of very fat Bacon in a Pint of Rum, both which being diſht up together, ſerv'd the Company at once both for meat and Drink.

Moſt of the Rum they get in this Country comes from New England, and is ſo bad and unwholeſome, that it is not improperly call'd "Kill-Devil." It is diſtill'd there from forreign moloſſes,[1] which, if Skilfully manag'd, yields near Gallon for Gallon. Their moloſſes comes from the ſame country, and has the name of "Long Sugar" in Carolina, I ſuppoſe from the Ropineſs of it, and Serves all the purpoſes of Sugar, both in their Eating and Drinking.

When they entertain their Friends bountifully, they fail not to ſet before them a Capacious Bowl of Bombo, ſo call'd from the Admiral of that name. This is a Compound of Rum and Water in Equal Parts, made palatable with the ſaid long Sugar. As good Humour begins to flow, and the Bowl to Ebb, they take Care to repleniſh it with Shear Rum, of which there always is a Reſerve under the Table. But ſuch Generous doings

[1] The ſpelling of the time. *Jones.*

1729 March happen only when that Balſam of life is plenty; for they have often ſuch Melancholy times, that neither Land-graves nor Caſſicks can procure one drop for their Wives, when they ly in, or are troubled with the Colick or Vapours. Very few in this Country have the Induſtry to plant Orchards, which, in a Dearth of Rum, might ſupply them with much better Liquor.

The Truth is, there is one Inconvenience that eaſily diſcourages lazy People from making This improvement: very often, in Autumn, when the Apples begin to ripen, they are viſited with Numerous Flights of paraqueets, that bite all the Fruit to Pieces in a moment, for the ſake of the Kernels. The Havock they make is Sometimes ſo great, that whole Orchards are laid waſte in Spite of all the Noiſes that can be made, or Mawkins that can be dreſſt up, to fright 'em away. Theſe Ravenous Birds viſit North Carolina only during the warm Seaſon, and ſo ſoon as the Cold begins to come on, retire back towards the Sun. They rarely Venture ſo far North as Virginia, except in a very hot Summer, when they viſit the moſt Southern Parts of it. They are very Beautiful; but like ſome other pretty Creatures, are apt to be loud and miſchievous.

27 Betwixt this and Edenton there are many thuckleberry Slaſhes, which afford a convenient Harbour for Wolves and Foxes. The firſt of theſe wild Beaſts is not ſo large and fierce as they are in other countries more Northerly. He will not attack a Man in the keeneſt of his Hunger, but run away from him, as from an Animal more miſchievous than himſelf.

The Foxes are much bolder, and will Sometimes not only make a Stand, but likewiſe aſſault any one that would balk them of their Prey. The Inhabitants hereabouts take the trouble to dig abundance of Wolf-Pits, ſo deep and perpendicular, that when a Wolf is once tempted into them, he can no more Scramble out again, than a Huſband who has taken the Leap can Scramble out of Matrimony.

Moſt of the Houſes in this Part of the Country are Log- 1729
houſes, covered with Pine or Cypreſs Shingles, 3 feet long, and March
one broad. They are hung upon Laths with Peggs, and their doors too turn upon Wooden Hinges, and have wooden Locks to Secure them, ſo that the Building is finiſht without Nails or other Iron-Work. They alſo ſet up their Pales without any Nails at all, and indeed more Securely than thoſe that are nail'd. There are 3 Rails mortiſed into the Poſts, the loweſt of which ſerves as a Sill with a Groove in the Middle, big enough to receive the End of the Pales: the middle Part of the Pale reſts againſt the Inſide of the Next Rail, and the Top of it is brought forward to the outſide of the uppermoſt. Such Wreathing of the Pales in and out makes them ſtand firm, and much harder to unfix than when nail'd in the Ordinary way.

Within 3 or 4 Miles of Edenton, the Soil appears to be a little more fertile, tho' it is much cut with Slaſhes, which ſeem all to have a tendency towards the Diſmal.

This Town is Situate on the North ſide of Albermarle Sound, which is there about 5 miles over. A Dirty Slaſh runs all along the Back of it, which in the Summer is a foul annoyance, and furniſhes abundance of that Carolina plague, muſquetas. There may be 40 or 50 Houſes, moſt of them Small, and built without Expenſe. A Citizen here is counted Extravagant, if he has Ambition enough to aſpire to a Brick-chimney. Juſtice herſelf is but indifferently Lodged, the Court-Houſe having much the Air of a Common Tobacco-Houſe. I believe this is the only Metropolis in the Chriſtian or Mahometan World, where there is neither Church, Chappel, Moſque, Synagogue, or any other Place of Publick Worſhip of any Sect or Religion whatſoever.

What little Devotion there may happen to be is much more private than their vices. The People ſeem eaſy without a Miniſter, as long as they are exempted from paying Him. Some-

1729 March times the Society for propagating the Goſpel has had the Charity to ſend over Miſſionaries to this Country; but unfortunately the Prieſt has been too Lewd for the people, or, which oftener happens, they too lewd for the Prieſt. For theſe Reaſons theſe Reverend Gentlemen have always left their Flocks as arrant Heathen as they found them. Thus much however may be ſaid for the Inhabitants of Edenton, that not a Soul has the leaſt taint of Hypocriſy, or Superſtition, acting very Frankly and above-board in all their Exceſſes.

Proviſions here are extremely cheap, and extremely good, ſo that People may live plentifully at a triffleing expenſe. Nothing is dear but Law, Phyſick, and Strong Drink, which are all bad in their Kind, and the laſt they get with ſo much Difficulty, that they are never guilty of the Sin of Suffering it to Sour upon their Hands. Their Vanity generally lies not ſo much in having a handſome Dining-Room, as a Handſome Houſe of Office: in this Kind of Structure they are really extravagant.

They are rarely guilty of Flattering or making any Court to their governors, but treat them with all the Exceſſes of Freedom and Familiarity. They are of Opinion their rulers wou'd be apt to grow inſolent, if they grew Rich, and for that reaſon take care to keep them poorer, and more dependent, if poſſible, than the Saints in New England uſed to do their Governors. They have very little coin, ſo they are forced to carry on their Home-Traffick with Paper-Money. This is the only Caſh that will tarry in the Country, and for that reaſon the Diſcount goes on increaſing between that and real Money, and will do ſo to the End of the Chapter.

28 Our Time paſſt heavily in our Quarters, where we were quite cloy'd with the Carolina Felicity of having nothing to do. It was really more inſupportable than the greateſt Fatigue, and made us even envy the Drudgery of our Friends in the Diſmal. Beſides, tho' the Men we had with us were kept in Exact Diſ-

cipline, and behav'd without Reproach, yet our Landlord began to be tired of them, fearing they would breed a Famine in his Family. 1729 March

Indeed, ſo many keen Stomachs made great Havock amongſt the Beef and Bacon, which he had laid in for his Summer Proviſion, nor cou'd he eaſily purchaſe More at that time of the Year, with the Money we paid him, becauſe the People having no certain Market ſeldom provide any more of theſe Commodities than will barely ſupply their own Occaſions. Beſides the Weather was now grown too warm to lay in a freſh Stock ſo late in the Spring. Theſe Conſiderations abated ſomewhat of that chearfulneſs with which he bidd us Welcome in the Beginning, and made him think the time quite as long as we did till the Surveyors return'd.

While we were thus all Hands uneaſy, we were comforted with the News that this Afternoon the Line was finiſht through the Diſmal. The Meſſenger told us it had been the hard work of three days to meaſure the Length of only 5 Miles, and mark the Trees as they paſt along, and by the moſt exact Survey they found the Breadth of the Diſmal in this Place to be completely 15 Miles.

How wide it may be in other Parts, we can give no Account, but believe it grows narrower towards the North; poſſibly towards Albermarle Sound it may be ſomething broader, where ſo many Rivers iſſue out of it. All we know for certain is, that from the Place where the Line enter'd the Diſmal, to where it came out, we found the Road round that Portion of it which belongs to Virginia to be about 65 Miles. How great the Diſtance may be from Each of thoſe Points, round that Part that falls within the Bounds of Carolina, we had no certain Information: tho' tis conjectur'd it cannot be ſo little as 30 Miles. At which rate the whole Circuit muſt be about an Hundred. What a Maſs of Mud and Dirt is treaſur'd up within this filthy cir-

1728 March cumference, and what a Quantity of Water muſt perpetually drain into it from the riſeing ground that Surrounds it on every Side?

Without taking the Exact level of the Diſmal, we may be ſure that it declines towards the Places where the Several Rivers take their Riſe, in order to carrying off the conſtant Supplies of Water. Were it not for ſuch Diſcharges, the whole Swamp would long Since have been converted into a Lake. On the other Side this Declenſion muſt be very gentle, elſe it would be laid perfectly dry by ſo many continual drains; Whereas, on the contrary, the Ground ſeems every where to be thoroughly drencht even in the dryeſt Seaſon of the Year.

The Surveyors concluded this day's Work with running 25 chains up into the Firm Land, where they waited farther Orders from the Commiſſioners.

29 This day the Surveyors proceeded with the Line no more than 1 Mile and 15 Chains, being Interrupted by a Mill Swamp, thro' which they made no difficulty of wading, in order to make their work more exact.

Thus, like Norway-Mice, theſe worthy Gentlemen went right forward, without Suffering themſelves to be turned out of the way by any Obſtacle whatever.

We are told by ſome Travellers, that thoſe Mice march in mighty Armies, deſtroying all the fruits of the Earth as they go along. But Something Peculiar to thoſe obſtinate little Animals is, that nothing ſtops them in their career, and if a Houſe happen to ſtand in their way, diſdaining to go an Inch about, they crawl up one ſide of it, and down the other: or if they meet with any River, or other Body of Water, they are ſo determin'd, that they ſwim directly over it, without varying one Point from their courſe for the Sake of any Safety or Convenience.

The Surveyors were alſo hinder'd ſome Time by Setting up

Poſts in the great Road, to ſhew the Bounds between the two Colonies. 1729 March

Our Chaplain return'd to us in the Evening from Edenton, in Company with the Carolina Commiſſioners. He had preacht there in the Court-Houſe, for want of a conſecrated Place, and made no leſs than 19 of Father Hennepin's Chriſtians.

By the permiſſion of the Carolina Commiſſioners, Mr. Swan was allow'd to go home, as ſoon as the Survey of the Diſmal was finiſht; He met with this Indulgence for a Reaſon that might very well have excuſt his coming at all; Namely, that he was lately marry'd.

What remain'd of the Drudgery for this Seaſon was left to Mr. Moſely, who had hitherto acted only in the capacity of a Commiſſioner. They offer'd to employ Mr. Joſeph Mayo as their Surveyor in Mr. Swan's ſtead, but He thought it not proper to accept of it, becauſe he had hitherto Acted as a Volunteer in behalf of Virginia, and did not care to change Sides, tho' it might have been to his Advantage.

The line was advanc'd this day 6 Miles and 35 chains, the Woods being pretty clear, and interrupted with no Swamp, or other wet Ground. The Land hereabout had all the Marks of Poverty, being for the moſt Part Sandy and full of Pines. This kind of Ground, tho' unfit for Ordinary Tillage, will however bring Cotton and Potatoes in Plenty, and Conſequently Food and Raiment to ſuch as are eaſily contented, and, like the Wild Iriſh, find more Pleaſure in Lazineſs than Luxury.

It alſo makes a Shift to produce Indian-corn, rather by the Felicity of the climate than by the Fertility of the Soil. They who are more Induſtrious than their Neighbours may make what Quantity of tar they pleaſe, tho' indeed they are not always ſure of a Market for it.

The Method of burning Tar in Sweden and Muſcovy Succeeds not well in this Warmer Part of the World. It ſeems they kill

1729 March the Pine-Trees, by barking them quite round at a certain Height, which in thoſe cold countreys brings down the Turpentine into the Stump in a Year's time. But experience has taught us that in warm Climates the Turpentine will not ſo eaſily deſcend, but is either fixt in the upper parts of the Tree, or fryed out by the intenſe Heat of the Sun.

Care was taken to Erect a Poſt in Every Road that our Line ran thro', with Virginia carv'd on the North-Side of it, and Carolina on the South, that the Bounds might every where appear. In the Evening the Surveyors took up their Quarters at the Houſe of one Mr. Parker, who, by the Advantage of a better Spot of Land than Ordinary, and a more induſtrious Wife, lives comfortably, and has a very neat plantation.

31 It rain'd a little this Morning, but this, happening again upon a Sunday, did not interrupt our Buſineſs. However the Surveyors made no Scruple of protracting and platting off their work upon that good day, becauſe it was rather an Amuſement than a Drudgery.

Here the Men feaſted on the fat of the Land, and believing the dirtieſt part of their work was over, had a more than Ordinary Gaiety of Heart. We chriſten'd two of our Landlord's children, which might have remained Infidels all their lives, had not we carry'd Chriſtianity home to his own Door.

The Truth of it is, our Neighbours of North Carolina are not ſo zealous as to go much out of their way to procure this benefit for their children: Otherwiſe, being ſo near Virginia, they might, without exceeding much Trouble, make a Journey to the next Clergyman, upon ſo good an Errand.

And indeed ſhould the Neighbouring Miniſters, once in two or three years, vouchſafe to take a turn among theſe Gentiles, to baptize them and their children, twould look a little Apoſtolical, and they might hope to be requited for it hereafter, if that be not thought too long to tarry for their Reward.

The Surveyors getting now upon better Ground, quite diſ- 1729
engag'd from Underwoods, puſht on the Line almoſt 12 Miles. April 1
They left Sommerton Chappel near 2 Miles to the Northward, ſo that there was now no Place of Publick Worſhip left in the whole Province of North Carolina.

The high Land of North Carolina was barren, and cover'd with a deep Sand; and the Low Grounds were wet and boggy, inſomuch that ſeveral of our Horſes were mir'd, and gave us frequent Opportunitys to ſhew our Horſemanſhip.

The Line cut William Spight's Plantation in two, leaving little more than his dwelling Houſe and Orchard in Virginia. Sundry other Plantations were Split in the ſame unlucky Manner, which made the Owners accountable to both Governments. Wherever we paſſed we conſtantly found the Borderers laid it to Heart if their Land was taken into Virginia: They choſe much rather to belong to Carolina, where they pay no Tribute, either to God or to Cæſar.

Another reaſon was, that the Government there is ſo Looſe, and the Laws ſo feebly executed, that, like thoſe in the Neighbourhood of Sydon formerly, every one does juſt what ſeems good in his own Eyes. If the Governor's hands have been weak in that Province, under the Authority of the Lord Proprietors, much weaker then were the hands of the Magiſtrate, who, tho' he might have had Virtue enough to endeavour to puniſh Offendors, which very rarely happen'd, yet that vertue had been quite Impotent, for want of Ability to put it in execution.

Beſides, their might have been ſome Danger, perhaps, in venturing to be ſo rigorous, for fear of undergoing the Fate of an honeſt Juſtice in Corotuck Precinct. This bold Magiſtrate, it ſeems, taking upon him to order a fellow to the Stocks, for being diſorderly in his Drink, was, for his intemperate Zeal, carry'd

1729 April thither himſelf, and narrowly eſcap'd being whippt by the Rabble into the Bargain.

This eaſy day's work carried the Line to the Banks of Somerton-Creek, that runs out of Chowan River, a little below the Mouth of Nottoway.

2 In leſs than a Mile from Somerton creek the Line was carry'd to Black-water, which is the Name of the upper Part of Chowan, running ſome Miles above the Mouth of Nottoway. It muſt be obſerv'd that Chowan, after taking a compaſs round the moſt beautiful part of North Carolina, empties itſelf into Albemarle Sound, a few Miles above Edenton. The Tide flows 7 or 8 miles higher than where the River changes its Name, and is Navigable thus high for any ſmall veſſel. Our Line interſected it exactly half a Mile to the northward of the mouth of Nottoway. However, in Obedience to his Majeſty's Command, we directed the Surveyors to come down the River as far as the Mouth of Nottoway, in order to continue our true Weſt Line from thence.

Thus we found the Mouth of Nottoway to lye no more than half a Minute farther to the Northward than Mr. Lawſon[1] had formerly done. That Gentleman's Obſervation, it ſeems, placed it in 36° 30′, and our Working made it out to be 36° 30½′—a very inconſiderable Variance.

The Surveyors croſt the River over againſt the Middle of the Mouth of Nottaway, where it was about 80 yards wide. From thence they ran the Line about half a Mile through a dirty Pocoſon, as far as an Indian Field. Here we took up our Lodging in a moiſt Situation, having the Pocoſon above mention'd on one Side of us, and a Swamp on the other.

In this Camp 3 of the Meherin Indians made us a Viſit. They told us that the Small Remains of their Nation had deſerted

[1] Lawſon's *Hiſtory of North Carolina*, in the ſame.

their Ancient Town, ſituated near the Mouth of Meherin River, for fear of the Cataubas, who had kill'd 14 of their People the Year before; and the few that Survived that Calamity, had taken refuge amongſt the Engliſh, on the Eaſt ſide of Chowan. Tho', if the complaint of theſe Indians were true, they are hardly uſed by our Carolina Friends. But they are the leſs to be pitied, becauſe they have ever been reputed the moſt falſe and treâcherous to the Engliſh of all the Indians in the Neighbourhood. 1729 April

Nor far from the Place where we lay, I obſerv'd a large Oak which had been blown up by the Roots, the Body of which was Shiver'd into perfect Strings, and was, in truth, the moſt Violent Effects of Lightning I ever ſaw.

But the moſt curious Inſtance of that dreadful meteor happen'd at York, where a man was kill'd near a Pine Tree in which the Lightening made a Hole before it Struck the Man, and left an exact Figure of the Tree upon his Breaſt, with all its Branches, to the wonder of all that beheld it, in which I ſhall be more particular hereafter.

We made another tryal of the Variation in this place, and found it ſome Minutes leſs than we had done at Coratuck-Inlet; but ſo ſmall a Difference might eaſily happen thro' ſome defect in one or other of the Obſervations, and, therefore, we alter'd not our compaſs for the Matter.

By the advantage of clear woods, the Line was extended 12 miles and three Quarters, as far as the Banks of Meherin. Tho' the Mouth of this River lye 15 miles below the Mouth of Nottaway, yet it winds ſo much to the Northward, that we came upon it, after running this Small Diſtance. During the firſt 7 Miles, we obſerved the Soil to be poor and Sandy; but as we approacht Meherin it grew better, tho' there it was cut to pieces by Sundry Miry Branches, which diſcharge themſelves 3

1729 April into that River, Several of our Horſes plunged up to the Saddle-Skirts, and were not diſengaged without Difficulty.

The latter Part of our Day's work was pretty laborious, becauſe of the unevenneſs of the way, and becauſs the low Ground of the River was full of Cypreſs-Snags, as Sharp and Dangerous to our Horſes as ſo many chevaux-de-frize. We found the whole diſtance from the Mouth of Nottaway to Meherin River, where our Line interſected it, thirteen Miles and a Quarter.

It was hardly poſſible to find a level large enough on the Banks of the River whereupon to pitch our Tent. But tho' the Situation was, on that Account, not very convenient for us, yet it was for our poor Horſes, by reaſon of the Plenty of Small Reeds on which they fed voraciouſly.

Theſe Reeds are green here all the Year round, and will keep cattle in tolerable good Plight during the Winter. But whenever the Hogs come where they are, they deſtroy them in a Short time, by ploughing up their Roots, of which, unluckily, they are very fond.

The River was in this place about as wide as the River Jordan, that is, 40 Yards, and wou'd be Navigable very high for flat Bottom-Boats and Canoes, if it were not choakt up with large Trees, brought down by every Freſh. Tho' the Banks were full 20 feet high from the Surface of the Water, yet we ſaw certain Marks of their having been Overflow'd.

Theſe Narrow Rivers that run high up into the Country are Subject to frequent Inundations, when the Waters are roll'd down with ſuch Violence as to carry all before them. The Logs that are then floated, are very fatal to the bridges built over theſe rivers, Which can hardly be contriv'd Strong enough to ſtand againſt ſo much Weight and Violence join'd together.

The Iſle of Wight County begins about 3 Miles to the Eaſt

of Meherin River, being divided from that of Nanſimond only by a Line of Markt trees. 1729 April

The River was here hardly fordable, tho' the Seaſon had been very dry. The Banks too were ſo Steep that our Horſes were forced to climb like Mules to get up them. Nevertheleſs we had the Luck to recover the Oppoſite Shore without Damage. 4

We halted for half an hour at Charles Anderſon's, who lives on the Weſtern Banks of the River, in order to chriſten one of his children. In the mean time, the Surveyors extended the Line 2 Miles and 39 chains, in which ſmall Diſtance Meherin River was ſo ſerpentine, that they croſt it 3 times.

Then we went on to Mr. Kinchin's, a Man of Figure and Authority in N Carolina, who lives about a Mile to the Southward of the Place where the Surveyors left off. By the Benefit of a little pains, and good Management, this worthy Magiſtrate lives in much Affluence.

Amongſt other Inſtances of his Induſtry, he had planted a good Orchard, which is not common in that Indolent climate; nor is it at all Strange, that ſuch improvident People, who take no thought for the Morrow, ſhou'd ſave themſelves the Trouble to make Improvements that will not pay them for ſeveral Years to come. Tho' if they cou'd truſt futurity for any thing, they certainly wou'd for Cyder, which they are ſo fond of, that they generally drink it before it has done working, leſt the Fermentation might unluckily turn it Sowr.

It is an Obſervation, which rarely fails of being true, both in Virginia and Carolina, that thoſe who take care to plant good Orchards are, in their General characters, Induſtrious People. This held good in our Landlord, who had many Houſes built on this Plantation, and every One kept in decent Repair. His Wife, too, was tidy, his Furniture clean, his Pewter bright, and nothing ſeem'd to be wanting to make his Home comfortable.

Mr. Kinchin made us the Compliment of his Houſe, but be-

1729 April cauſe we were willing to be as little troubleſome as poſſible, we order'd the Tent to be pitch'd in his Orchard, where the Bloſſoms of the Apple Trees contributed not a little to the ſweetneſs of our Lodging.

Becauſe the Spring was now pretty forward, and the Rattle-Snakes began to crawl out of their Winter-Quarters, and might grow dangerous, both to the Men and their Horſes, it was determin'd to proceed no farther with the Line till the Fall. Beſides, the Uncommon Fatigue the People had undergone for near 6 Weeks together, and the Inclination they all had to viſit their Reſpective Familys, made a Receſs highly reaſonable.

The Surveyors were employ'd great part of the Day, in forming a Correct and Elegant Map of the Line, from Corotuck-Inlet to the Place where they left off. On caſting up the account in the moſt accurate manner, they found the whole diſtance we had run to amount to 73 Miles and 13 chains. Of the Map they made two fair copies, which agreeing exactly, were ſubſcrib'd by the Commiſſioners of both colonies, and one of them was delivered to thoſe on the Part of Virginia, and the other to thoſe on the Part of North Carolina.

6 Thus we finiſh'd our Spring Campaign, and having taken leave of our Carolina-Friends, and agreed to meet them again the Tenth of September following, at the ſame Mr. Kinchin's, in order to continue the Line, we croſſt Meherin River near a Quarter of a Mile from the Houſe. About ten Miles from that we halted at Mr. Kindred's Plantation, where we Chriſten'd two Children.

It happen'd that ſome of Iſle of Wight militia Were exerciſing in the Adjoining Paſture, and there were Females enough attending that Martial Appearance to form a more invincible corps.

Ten miles farther we paſſed Nottoway River at Bolton's Ferry, and took up our Lodgings about three Miles from thence, at the Houſe of Richard Parker, an honeſt Planter, whoſe Labours

were rewarded with Plenty, which, in this country is the Conſtant Portion of the Induſtrious. 1729 April

The Next day being Sunday, we order'd Notice to be ſent to all the Neighbourhood that there wou'd be a Sermon at this Place, and an Opportunity of Chriſtening their Children. But the Likelihood of Rain got the better of their Devotion, and what perhaps, Might Still be a Stronger motive of their Curioſity. In the Morning we deſpatcht a runner to the Nottoway Town, to let the Indians know we intended them a Viſit that Evening, and our honeſt Landlord was ſo kind as to be our Pilot thither, being about 4 Miles from his Houſe. 7

Accordingly in the Afternoon we marcht in good Order to the Town, where the Female Scouts, ſtation'd on an Eminence for that purpoſe, had no ſooner ſpy'd us, but they gave Notice of our Approach to their Fellow-Citizens by continual Whoops and Cries, which cou'd not poſſibly have been more diſmal at the Sight of their moſt implacable Enemys.

This Signal Aſſembled all their Great Men, who receiv'd us in a Body, and conducted us into the Fort. This Fort was a Square Piece of Ground, incloſ'd with Subſtantial Puncheons, or Strong Paliſades, about ten feet high, and leaning a little outwards, to make a Scalade more difficult.

Each ſide of the Square might be about 100 Yards long, with Loop-holes at proper Diſtances, through which they may fire upon the Enemy.

Within this Incloſure we found Bark Cabanes Sufficient to lodge all their people, in Caſe they ſhould be obliged to retire thither. Theſe Cabanes are no other but Cloſe Arbours made of Saplings, arched at the top, and cover'd ſo well with Bark as to be proof againſt all Weather. The fire is made in the Middle, according to the Hibernian Faſhion, the Smoak whereof finds no other Vent but at the Door, and ſo keeps the whole family Warm, at the Expenſe both of their Eyes and Complexion.

1729 April

The Indians have no ſtanding Furniture in their Cabanes but Hurdles to repoſe their Perſons upon, which they cover with Mats or Deer-ſkins.. We were conducted to the beſt Apartments in the Fort, which juſt before had been made ready for our Reception, and adorn'd with new Mats, that were ſweet and clean.

The Young Men had Painted themſelves in a Hideous Manner, not ſo much for Ornament as Terror. In that frightful Equipage they entertain'd us with Sundry War-Dances, wherein they endeavour'd to look as formidable as poſſible. The Inſtrument they danct to was an Indian-drum, that is, a large Gourd with a Skin bract tort over the Mouth of it. The Dancers all Sang to this Muſick, keeping exact Time with their feet, while their Heads and Arms were ſcrew'd into a thouſand Menacing Poſtures.

Upon this occaſion the Ladies had array'd themſelves in all their finery. They were Wrapt in their Red and Blue Match-Coats, thrown ſo Negligently about them, that their Mehogony Skins appear'd in Several Parts, like the Lacedæmonian Damſels of Old. Their Hair was breeded with white and Blue Peak, and hung gracefully in a large Roll upon their Shoulders.

This peak Conſiſts of Small Cylinders cut out of a Conque-Shell, drill'd through and Strung like Beads. It ſerves them both for Money and Jewels, the Blue being of much greater Value than the White, for the ſame reaſon that Ethiopian Miſtreſſes in France are dearer than French, becauſe they are more Scarce. The Women wear Necklaces and Bracelets of theſe precious Materials, when they have a mind to appear lovely. Tho' their complexions be a little Sad-Colour'd, yet their Shapes are very Strait and well proportion'd. Their Faces are Seldom handſome, yet they have an Air of Innocence and Baſhfulneſs, that with a little leſs dirt wou'd not fail to make them deſirable. Such Charms might have had their full Effect upon Men who

had been ſo long deprived of female converſation, but that the whole Winter's Soil was ſo cruſted on the Skins of thoſe dark Angels, that it requir'd a very Strong Appetite to approach them. The Bear's oyl, with which they anoint their Perſons all over, makes their Skins Soft, and at the Same time protects them from every Species of Vermin that uſe to be troubleſome to other uncleanly People. 1729 April

We were unluckily ſo many, that they cou'd not well make us the Complement of Bed-fellows, according to the Indian Rules of Hoſpitality, tho' a grave Matron whiſper'd one of the Commiſſioners very civilly in the Ear, that if her Daughter had been but one year Older, ſhe ſhould have been at his Devotion.

It is by no means a loſs of Reputation among the Indians, for Damſels that are Single to have Intrigues with the Men; on the contrary, they account it an Argument of Superior Merit to be liked by a great Number of Gallants. However, like the Ladys that Game they are a little Mercenary in their Amours, and ſeldom beſtow their Favours out of Stark Love and Kindneſs. But after theſe Women have once appropriated their Charms by Marriage, they are from thenceforth faithful to their Vows, and will hardly ever be tempted by an Agreeable Gallant, or be provokt by a Brutal or even by a fumbling Huſband to go aſtray.

The little Work that is done among the Indians is done by the poor Women, while the men are quite Idle, or at moſt employ'd only in the Gentlemanly Diverſions of Hunting and Fiſhing.

In this, as well as in their Wars, they now uſe nothing but Fire-Arms, which they purchaſe of the Engliſh for Skins. Bows and Arrows are grown into diſuſe, except only amongſt their Boys. Nor is it ill Policy, but on the contrary very prudent, thus to furniſh the Indians with Fire-Arms, becauſe it makes them depend entirely upon the Engliſh, not only for their Trade, but even for their ſubſiſtence. Beſides, they were really able to

1729 April

do more miſchief, while they made uſe of Arrows, of which they wou'd let Silently fly Several in a Minute with Wonderful Dexterity, whereas now they hardly ever diſcharge their Fire-locks more than once, which they inſidiouſly do from behind a Tree, and then retire as nimbly as the Dutch Horſe Uſ'd to do now and then formerly in Flanders.

We put the Indians to no expenſe, but only of a little Corn for our Horſes, for which in Gratitude we cheer'd their hearts with what Rum we had left, which they love better than they do their Wives and Children.

Tho' theſe Indians dwell among the Engliſh, and ſee in what Plenty a little Induſtry enables them to live, yet they chuſe to continue in their Stupid Idleneſs, and to Suffer all the Inconveniences of Dirt, Cold, and Want, rather than to diſturb their heads With care, or defile their Hands with labour.

The whole Number of People belonging to the Notoway Town, if you include Women and Children, amount to about 200. Theſe are the only Indians of any conſequence now remaining within the Limits of Virginia. The reſt are either removed, or dwindled to a very inconſiderable Number, either by deſtroying one another, or elſe by the Small-Pox and other Diſeaſes. Tho' nothing has been ſo fatal to them as their ungovernable Paſſion for Rum, with which, I am ſorry to ſay it, they have been but too liberally ſupply'd by the Engliſh that live near them.

And here I muſt lament the bad Succeſs Mr. Boyle's Charity has hitherto had towards converting any of theſe poor Heathens to Chriſtianity. Many children of our Neighbouring Indians have been brought up in the College of William and Mary. They have been taught to read and write, and have been carefully Inſtructed in the Principles of the Chriſtian Religion, till they came to be men. Yet after they return'd home, inſtead

of civilizeing and converting the reſt, they have immediately Relapt into Infidelity and Barbariſm themſelves. 1729 April

And ſome of them too have made the worſt uſe of the Knowledge they acquir'd among the Engliſh, by employing it againſt their Benefactors. Beſides, as they unhappily forget all the good they learn, and remember the Ill, they are apt to be more vicious and diſorderly than the reſt of their Countrymen.

I ought not to quit this Subject without doing Juſtice to the great Prudence of Colo Spotſwood in this Affair. That Gentleman was lieut Governor of Virginia when Carolina was engaged in a Bloody War with the Indians. At that critical Time it was thought expedient to keep a Watchful Eye upon our Tributary Savages, who we knew had nothing to keep them to their Duty but their Fears.

Then it was that he demanded of each Nation a Competent Number of their great Men's Children to be ſent to the College, where they ſerv'd as ſo many Hoſtages for the good Behaviour of the Reſt, and at the ſame time were themſelves principled in the Chriſtian Religion. He alſo Plac'd a School-Maſter among the Saponi Indians, at the ſalary of Fifty Pounds P Annum, to inſtruct their Children. The Perſon that undertook that Charitable work was Mr. Charles Griffin, a Man of a good Family, who by the Innocence of his Life, and the Sweetneſs of his Temper, was perfectly well qualify'd for that pious undertaking. Beſides, he had ſo much the Secret of mixing Pleaſure with inſtruction, that he had not a Scholar, who did not love him affectionately.

Such Talents muſt needs have been bleſt with a Proportionable Succeſs, had he not been unluckily remov'd to the College, by which he left the good work he had begun unfiniſht. In ſhort, all the Pains he had taken among the Infidels had no other Effect but to make them ſomething cleanlier than other Indians are.

1729 April

The Care Colo Spotſwood took to tincture the Indian Children with Chriſtianity produc'd the following Epigram, which was not publiſht during his Adminiſtration, for fear it might then have lookt like flattery.

Long has the Furious Prieſt aſſay'd in Vain,
With Sword and Faggot, Infidels to gain,
But now the Milder Soldier wiſely tryes
By Gentler Methods to unveil their Eyes.
Wonders apart, he knew 'twere vain t'engage
The fix'd Preventions of Miſguided Age.
With fairer Hopes he forms the Indian Youth
To early Manners, Probity and Truth.
The Lyon's whelp thus on the Lybian Shore
Is tam'd and Gentled by the Artful Moor,
Not the Grim Sire, inured to Blood before.

I am ſorry I can't give a Better Account of the State of the Poor Indians with reſpect to Chriſtianity, altho' a great deal of Pains has been and ſtill continues to be taken with them. For my Part, I muſt be of Opinion, as I hinted before, that there is but one way of Converting theſe poor Infidels, and reclaiming them from Barbarity, and that is, Charitably to intermarry with them, according to the Modern Policy of the moſt Chriſtian King in Canada and Louiſiana.

Had the Engliſh done this at the firſt Settlement of the Colony, the Infidelity of the Indians had been worn out at this Day, with their Dark Complexions, and the Country had ſwarm'd with People more than it does with Inſects.

It was certainly an unreaſonable Nicety, that prevented their entering into ſo good-Natur'd an Alliance. All Nations of men have the ſame Natural Dignity, and we all know that very bright Talents may be lodg'd under a very dark Skin. The principal Difference between one People and another proceeds only from the Different Opportunities of Improvement.

The Indians by no means want underſtanding, and are in

their Figure tall and well-proportion'd. Even their Copper-colour'd Complexion wou'd admit of Blanching, if not in the firſt, at the fartheſt in the Second Generation. 1728 April

I may ſafely venture to ſay, the Indian Women would have made altogether as Honeſt Wives for the firſt Planters, as the Damſels they uſ'd to purchaſe from aboard the Ships. It is Strange, therefore, that any good Chriſtian Shou'd have refuſed a wholeſome, Straight Bed-fellow, when he might have had ſo fair a Portion with her, as the Merit of ſaving her Soul.

We reſted on our clean Mats very comfortably, tho' alone, and 8
the next Morning went to the Toilet of ſome of the Indian Ladys, where, what with the Charms of their Perſons and the Smoak of their Apartments, we were almoſt blinded. They offer'd to give us Silk-Graſs Baſkets of their own making, which we Modeſtly refuſed, knowing that an Indian preſent, like that of a Nun, is a Liberality put out to Intereſt, and a Bribe plac'd to the greateſt Advantage.

Our Chaplain obſerv'd with concern, that the Ruffles of Some of our Fellow Travellers were a little diſcolour'd with pochoon, wherewith the good Man had been told thoſe Ladies uſ'd to improve their inviſible charms.

About 10 a Clock we marched out of Town in good order, & the War Captains ſaluted us with a Volley of Small-Arms. From thence we proceeded over Black-water Bridge to colo' Henry Harriſons, where we congratulated each other upon our Return into Chriſtendom.

Thus ended our Progreſs for this Seaſon, which we may juſtly ſay was attended with all the Succeſs that could be expected. Beſides the Punctual Performance of what was Committed to us, we had the Pleaſure to bring back every one of our Company in perfect Health. And this we muſt acknowledge to be a Singular Bleſſing, conſidering the Difficulties and Dangers to which they had been expoſ'd.

1729 Sept. We had reaſon to fear the many Waters and Sunken Grounds, thro' which We were obliged to wade, might have thrown the men into Sundry Acute diſtempers; eſpecially the Diſmal, where the Soil was ſo full of Water, and the Air ſo full of Damps, that nothing but a Dutchman cou'd live in them.

Indeed the Foundation of all our Succeſs was the Exceeding dry Seaſon. It rain'd during the whole Journey but rarely, and then, as when Herod built his Temple, only in the Night or upon the Sabbath, when it was no hinderance at all to our progreſs.

The tenth of September being thought a little too ſoon for the Commiſſioners to meet, in order to proceed on the Line, on account of Snakes, t'was agreed to put it off to the twentieth of the ſame Month, of which due Notice was ſent to the Carolina-Commiſſioners.

19 We, on the part of Virginia, that we might be ſure to be punctual, arriv'd at Mr. Kinchin's, the place appointed, on the 19th, after a Journey of three days, in which nothing Remarkable happen'd.

We found three of the Carolina-Commiſſioners had taken Poſſeſſion of the Houſe, having come thither by water from Edenton. By the Great Quantity of Proviſions theſe Gentlemen brought, and the few men they had to eat them, we were afraid they intended to carry the Line to the South ſea.

They had 500lbs of bacon and dry'd Beef, and 500lbs of Biſket, and not above three or four men. The misfortune was, they forgot to provide Horſes to carry their good things, or elſe truſted to the Incertainty of hireing them here, which, conſidering the Place, was leaving too much to that Jilt, Hazard.

On our part we had taken better Care, being completely furniſht with every thing neceſſary for tranſporting our Baggage

and Proviſions. Indeed we brought no other Proviſions out with us but 1000lbs of Bread, and had Faith enough to depend on Providence for our Meat, being deſirous to huſband the publick Money as much as poſſible. 1729 Sept.

We had no leſs than 20 men, beſides the Chaplain, the Surveyors and all the Servants, to be Subſiſted upon this Bread. However, that it might hold out the better, our men had been Order'd to provide themſelves at Home with Proviſion for Ten days, in which time we judg'd we ſhould get beyond the Inhabitants, where Foreſt-Game of all ſorts was like to be plenty at that time of the Year.

This being the day appointed for our Rendezvous, great part of it was Spent in the careful fixing our Baggage and Aſſembling our Men, who were order'd to meet us here. We took care to examine their Arms, and made proof of the Powder provided for the Expedition. 20

Our Proviſion-Horſes had been hinder'd by the rain from coming up exactly at the Day; but this Delay was the leſs Diſappointment, by reaſon of the ten days' Subſiſtence the men had been directed to provide for themſelves.

Mr. Moſeley did not join us till the afternoon, nor Mr. Swan till Several Days after.

Mr. Kinchin had unadviſedly ſold the Men a little Brandy of his own making, which produced much diſorder, cauſing ſome to be too cholerick, and others too loving; Inſomuch that a Damſel, who aſſiſted in the Kitchen, had certainly Suffer'd what the Nuns call Martyrdom, had ſhe not capitulated a little too ſoon.

This outrage would have call'd for ſome ſevere Diſcipline, had ſhe not baſhfully withdrawn herſelf early in the Morning, & ſo carry'd off the Evidence.

We deſpatcht away the Surveyors without Loſs of Time, who, with all their diligence, could carry the Line no farther 21

1729 Sept. than 3 Miles and 176 Poles, by reaſon the Low-Ground was one entire Thicket. In that diſtance they croſt Meherin River the 4th time. In the mean while the Virginia-Commiſſioners thought proper to conduct their Baggage a farther way about, for the Convenience of a clearer Road.

The Carolina-Gentlemen did at length, more by Fortune than forecaſt, hire a clumſy Vehicle, ſomething like a cart, to tranſport their Effects as far as Roanoak. This wretched Machine, at firſt Setting out, met with a very rude choque, that broke a Caſe-Bottle of Cherry Brandy in ſo unlucky a Manner that not one precious Drop was ſaved. This Melancholy Beginning foreboded an unproſperous Journey, and too quick a Return, to the Perſons moſt immediately concern'd.

In our way we croſſt Fountains Creek, which runs into Meherin River, ſo call'd from the diſaſter of an unfortunate Indian Trader who had formerly been drowned in it, and, like Icarus, left his Name to that fatal ſtream. We took up our Quarters on the Plantation of John Hill, where we pitcht our Tent, with deſign to tarry till ſuch time as the Surveyors cou'd work their way to us.

22 This being Sunday, we had an Opportunity of reſting from our Labours. The expectation of ſuch a Novelty as a Sermon in theſe Parts brought together a Numerous Congregation. When the Sermon was over, our Chaplain did his part towards making Eleven of them Chriſtians.

Several of our men had Intermitting feavers, but were ſoon reſtor'd to their Health again by proper Remedies. Our chief Medicine was Dogwood Bark, which we uſed, inſtead of that of Peru, with good Succeſs. Indeed, it was given in larger Quantity, but then, to make the Patients amends, they ſwallowed much fewer Doſes.

In the afternoon our Proviſion-Horſes arrived Safe in the Camp. They had met with very heavy Rains, but, thank God, not a Single Biſket receiv'd the leaſt Damage thereby.

We were furniſht by the Neighbours with very lean Cheeſe and very fat Mutton, upon which occaſion twill not be improper to draw one concluſion, from the Evidence of North Carolina, that Sheep would thrive much better in the Woods than in Paſture Land, provided a careful Shepherd were employed to keep them from Straying, and, by the help of Dogs, to protect them alſo from the wolves. 1729 Sept.

The Surveyors came to us at Night, tho' they had not brought the Line ſo far as our Camp, for which reaſon we thought it needleſs to go forward till they came up with us. They cou'd run no more than 4 Miles and 5 Poles, becauſe the Ground was every where grown up with thick Buſhes. 23

The Soil here appear'd to be very good, tho' much broken betwixt Fountain creek and Roanoak River. The Line croſt Meherin the 5th and laſt time, nor were our People ſorry to part with a Stream the Meanders of which had given them ſo much Trouble.

Our Hunters brought us four wild Turkeys, which at that Seaſon began to be fat and very delicious, eſpecially the Hens.

Theſe Birds ſeem to be of the Buſtard kind, and fly heavily. Some of them are exceedingly large, and weigh upwards of 40 Pounds; Nay, ſome bold Hiſtorians venture to ſay, upwards of 50. They run very faſt, ſtretching forth their Wings all the time, like the Oſtrich, by way of Sails to quicken their Speed.

They rooſt commonly upon very high Trees, Standing near ſome River or Creek, and are ſo ſtupify'd at the Sight of Fire, that if you make a Blaze in the Night near the Place where they rooſt, you may fire upon them Several times ſucceſſively, before they will dare to fly away.

Their Spurs are ſo Sharp and Strong that the Indians uſed formerly to point their Arrows with them, tho' now they point them with a Sharp white Stone. In the Spring the Turkey-

1729 Sept. Cocks begin to gobble, which is the Language wherein they make Love.

. It rain'd very hard in the Night, with a violent Storm of Thunder and Lightening, which oblig'd us to trench in our Tent all round, to carry off the Water that fell upon it.

24 So ſoon as the men could dry their Blankets, we ſent out the Surveyors, who now meeting with more favourable Grounds, advanc'd the line 7 Miles and 82 Poles. However, the Commiſſioners did not think proper to decamp that day, believing they might eaſily overtake the Surveyors the next. In the mean time they ſent out ſome of their moſt expert Gunners, who brought in four more wild Turkeys.

This part of the Country being very proper for raiſing Cattle and Hogs, we obſerv'd the Inhabitants lived in great plenty without killing themſelves with Labour.

I found near our Camp ſome Plants of that kind of Rattle-Snake Root, called Star-graſs. The Leaves ſhoot out circularly, and grow Horiſontally and near the Ground. The Root is in Shape not unlike the Rattle of that Serpent, and is a Strong Antidote againſt the Bite of it. It is very bitter, and where it meets with any Poiſon, works by Violent Sweats, but where it meets with none, has no Senſible Operation but that of putting the Spirits into a great Hurry, and ſo of promoting Perſpiration.

The Rattle-ſnake has an utter Antipathy to this Plant, inſomuch that if you Smear your hands with the Juice of it, you may handle the Viper Safely. Thus much I can ſay on my own Experience, that once in July, when theſe Snakes are in their greateſt Vigour, I beſmear'd a Dog's Noſe with the Powder of this Root, and made him trample on a large Snake Several times, which, however, was ſo far from biting him, that it perfectly Sicken'd at the Dog's Approach, and turn'd its Head from him with the Utmoſt Averſion.

Our Chaplain, to Shew his Zeal, made an Excurſion of 6 Miles to chriſten 2 children, but without the leaſt regard to the good Chear at theſe Solemnities. 1729 Sept.

The Surveyors taking the Advantage of clear Woods, puſht on the Line 7 Miles and 40 Poles. In the mean time the Commiſſioners marcht with the Baggage about 12 miles, and took up their Quarters near the Banks of the Beaver Pond, (which is one Branch of Fountain's creek,) juſt by the place where the Surveyors were to finiſh their day's work. 25

In our march one of the men kill'd a Small Rattle-Snake, which had no more than two Rattles. Thoſe Vipers remain in Vigour generally till towards the End of September, or Sometimes later, if the Weather continue a little warm. On this conſideration we had provided three Several Sorts of Rattle-Snake-Root, made up into proper Doſes, and ready for immediate uſe, in caſe any one of the Men or their Horſes had been bitten.

We croſſt Fountain's Creek once more in our Journey this day, and found the Grounds very Rich, notwithſtanding they were broken and Stony.

Near the place where we encampt the county of Brunſwick is divided from *the* Iſle of Wight. Theſe Counties run quite on the back of Surry and Prince George, and are laid out in very irregular Figures.

As a Proof the Land mended hereabouts, we found the Plantations began to grow thicker by much than we had found them lower down.

We hurry'd away the Surveyors without Loſs of time, who extended the Line 10 Miles and 160 Poles, the Grounds proving dry and free from Under-woods. By the way the chain-carriers kill'd two more Rattle-Snakes, which I own was a little ungrateful, becauſe two or three of the Men had Strided over them without receiving any Hurt; tho' one of theſe Vipers had 26

1729 Sept. made bold to Strike at one of the Baggage Horſes, as he went along, but by good Luck his Teeth only grazed on the hoof, without doing him any Damage. However, theſe Accidents were, I think, ſo many Arguments that we had very good Reaſon to defer our coming out till the 20th of September.

We obſerv'd Abundance of St. Andrew's Croſs in all the Woods we paſſed thro', which is the common Remedy uſed by the Indian traders to cure their horſes when they are bitten by Rattle-Snakes.

It grows on a Strait Stem, about 18 Inches high, and bears a Yellow Flower on the Top, that has an Eye of Black in the Middle, with Several Pairs of Narrow Leaves Shooting out at right Angles from the Stalk over againſt one another.

This Antidote grows Providentially all over the Woods, and upon all Sorts of Soil, that it may be every where at hand in Caſe a Diſaſter ſhould Happen, and may be had all the hot Months while the Snakes are dangerous.

About four a'clock in the Afternoon we took up our Quarters upon Caban Branch, which alſo diſcharges itſelf into Fountain Creek. On our way we obſerved Several Meadows cloth'd with very rank-Graſs, and Branches full of tall Reeds, in which Cattle keep themſelves fat good part of the Winter. But Hogs are as injurious to both as Goats are ſaid to be to Vines, and for that Reaſon it was not lawful to Sacrifice them to Bacchus. We halted by the way to Chriſten two Children at a Spring, where their Mothers waylaid us for that good Purpoſe.

27 It was ten of the clock before the Surveyors got to work, becauſe ſome of the Horſes had ſtraggled to a great Diſtance from the Camp. Nevertheleſs, meeting with Practicable Woods, they advanct the Line 9 Miles and 104 Poles. We croſſt over Pea-Creek about four Miles from our Quarters, and, three Miles farther, Lizard-Creek, both which empty their Waters into Roanoak River.

Between theſe two Creeks a poor Man waited for us with five Children to be baptiz'd, and we halted till the Ceremony was ended. The Land ſeem'd to be very good, by the largeneſs of the Trees, tho' very Stony. We proceeded as far as Pidgeon-Rooſt-Creek, which alſo runs into Roanoak, and there Quarter'd. 1729 Sept.

We had not the pleaſure of the Company of any of the Carolina-Commiſſioners in this day's March, except Mr. Moſeley's, the reſt tarrying behind to wait the coming up of their Baggage-Cart, which they had now not ſeen nor heard (though the Wheels made a Diſmal Noiſe) for ſeveral days paſt.

Indeed it was a very difficult Undertaking to conduct a Cart thro' ſuch pathleſs and perplext Woods, and no wonder if its Motion was a little Planetary. We would have payd them the Complement of waiting for them, cou'd we have done it at any other Expenſe but that of the Publick.

In the Stony Grounds we rode over we found great Quantity of the true Ipocoacanna, which in this part of the World is call'd Indian-Phyſick. This has Several Stalks growing up from the Same Root about a Foot high, bearing a Leaf reſembling that of a Straw-Berry. It is not ſo ſtrong as that from Brazil, but has the ſame happy Effects, If taken in Somewhat a larger Doſe. It is an Excellent Vomit, and generally cures intermitting Fevers and Bloody Fluxes at once or twice taking. There is abundance of it in the upper part of the Country, where it delights moſt in a Stony Soil intermixt with black Mold.

Our Surveyors got early to work, yet cou'd forward the Line 28
but 6 miles and 121 Poles, becauſe of the uneven Grounds in the Neighbourhood of Roanoak, which they croſſt in this Day's work.

In that Place the River is 49 Poles wide, and rolls down a cryſtal Stream of very Sweet water, Inſomuch that when there comes to be a great Monarch in this Part of the World, he will

1729 Sept. cauſe all the Water for his own Table to be brought from Roanoak, as the great Kings of Perſia did theirs from the Nile and Choaſpis, becauſe the Waters of thoſe Rivers were light, and not apt to corrupt.[1]

The great Falls of Roanoak lie about 20 Miles lower, to which a Sloop of Moderate Burthen may come up. There are, beſides theſe, many Smaller Falls above, tho' none that entirely intercept the Paſſage of the River, as the great Ones do, by a Chain of Rocks for 8 Miles together.

The River forks about 36 Miles higher, and both Branches are pretty equal in Breadth where they divide, tho' the Southern, now call'd the Dan, runs up the fartheſt. That to the North runs away near North-weſt, and is call'd the Staunton, and heads not far from the Source of Appamatuck River, while the Dan ſtretches away pretty near Weſt & runs clear thro' the great Mountains.

We did not follow the Surveyors till towards Noon, being detain'd in our camp to Chriſten Several more Children. We were conducted a nearer way, by a famous Woodſman, call'd Epaphroditus Bainton. This Foreſter Spends all his time in ranging the Woods, and is ſaid to make great Havock among the Deer, and other Inhabitants of the Foreſt, not much wilder than Himſelf.

We proceeded to the Canoe-Landing on Roanoak, where we paſſt the River with the Baggage. But the Horſes were directed to a Ford about a Mile higher, call'd by the Indians Moni-ſeep, which ſignifies, in their Jargon, Shallow Water. This is the Ford where the Indian-Traders uſed to croſs with their Horſes, in their way to the Catauba Nation.

[1] The ſame Humour prevails at this day in the Kings of Denmark, who order all the Eaſt India Ships of that nation to call at the Cape of Good Hope, and take in a But of Water from a Spring on the Table Hill, and bring it to Coppenhagen, for Their Majeſty's own Drinking.

There are many Rocks in the River thereabouts, on which grows a kind of Water-Grafs, which the wild Geefe are fond of, and refort to it in great Numbers. 1729 Sept.

We landed on the South Side of Roanoak at a Plantation of Colo. Mumford's, where, by that Gentleman's Special Directions, we met with Sundry Refreſhments. Here we pitcht our Tent, for the benefit of the Proſpect, upon an Eminence that overlookt a broad Piece of Low Ground, very rich, tho' liable to be overflow'd.

By the way, one of our Men kill'd another Rattle-Snake, with 11 Rattles, having a large Gray Squirrel in his Maw, the head of which was already digeſted, while the Body remain'd Stil entire.

The way theſe Snakes catch their Prey is thus: They Ogle the poor little animal, till by force of the Charm he falls down Stupify'd and Senſeleſs on the Ground. In that condition the Snake approaches, and moiſtens firſt one Ear and then the Other with his Spawl, and after that the other Parts of the Head, to make all Slippery. When that is done, he draws this Member into his Mouth, and after it, by Slow Degrees, all the reſt of the Body.

This being Sunday, we had Divine Service and a Sermon, at 29 which Several of the Borderers aſſiſted, and we concluded the Duties of the Day in the Chriſtening five Children. Our Devotion being perform'd in the Open Field, like that of Mr. Whitfield's Flocks, an unfortunate Shower of Rain had almoſt diſperſt our Congregation. About four in the Afternoon the Carolina-Commiſſioners made a Shift to come up with us, whom we had left at Pidgeon-Rooſt Creek the Fryday before, waiting for their Proviſions. When their Cart came up they prudently diſcharg'd it, and rather choſe to hire two Men to carry ſome part of their Baggage. The Reſt they had been Obliged to

1729 Sept. leave behind, in the Crotch of an Old Tree, for want of proper Conveniences to tranſport it any farther.

We found in the low Ground Several Plants of the Fern Root, which is ſaid to be much the Strongeſt Antidote yet diſcover'd againſt the Poiſon of the Rattle-Snake. The Leaves of it reſemble thoſe of Fern, from whence it obtain'd its Name. Several Stalks ſhoot from the ſame Root, about 6 Inches long, that ly moſtly on the Ground. It grows in a very Rich Soil, under the Protection of Some tall Tree, that Shades it from the Meridian Beams of the Sun. The Root has a faint Spicy taſt, and is preferr'd by the Southern Indians to all other Counterpoiſons in this Country.

But there is another Sort preferr'd by the Northern Indians, that they call Seneca Rattle-Snake-Root, to which wonderful Vertues are aſcrib'd in the Cure of Pleuriſys, Feavers, Rhumatiſms, and Dropſys; beſides it being a powerfull Antidote againſt the Venom of the Rattle-Snake.

In the Evening the Meſſenger we had ſent to Chriſtanna return'd with five Saponi Indians. We cou'd not entirely rely on the Dexterity of our own Men, which induced us to ſend for ſome of the Indians. We agreed with two of the moſt expert of them, upon reaſonable Terms, to hunt for us the remaining Part of our Expedition. But one of them falling Sick ſoon after, we were content to take only the other, whoſe Hunting Name was Bear-ſkin.

This Indian, either by his Skill or good Luck, Supply'd us plentifully all the way with Meat, Seldom diſcharging his piece in vain.

By his Aſſiſtance, therefore, we were able to keep our men to their Buſineſs, without Suffering them to Straggle about the Woods, on pretence of furniſhing us with Neceſſary Food.

30 It had rain'd all night, and made every thing ſo wet, that our Surveyors cou'd not get to their Work before Noon. They

cou'd therefore meaſure no more than four Miles and 220 Poles, which, according to the beſt information we cou'd get, was near as high as the uppermoſt Inhabitant at that time. 1729 Sept.

We croſt the Indian Trading path above-mention'd about a Mile from our Camp, and a Mile beyond that forded Haw-Tree-Creek. The Woods we paſſed thro' had all the Tokens of Sterility, except a ſmall Poiſon'd Field, on which grew no Tree bigger than a Slender Sapling. The larger Trees had been deſtroyed, either by Fire or Caterpillars, which is often the Caſe in the upland Woods, and the places where ſuch Deſolation happens are call'd Poiſon'd Fields.

We took up our Quarters upon a Branch of Great Creek, where there was tolerable good Graſs for the poor Horſes. Theſe poor Animals having now got beyond the Latitude of Corn, were obliged to Shift as well as they cou'd for themſelves.

On our way the men rouſ'd a Bear, which being the firſt we had ſeen ſince we came out, the poor Beaſt had many purſuers. Several Perſons contended for the Credit of killing Him: tho' he was ſo poor he was not worth the Powder. This was ſome Diſappointment to our Woodſmen, who commonly prefer the Fleſh of Bears to every kind of Veniſon. There is Something indeed peculiar to this Animal, namely, that its fat is very firm, and may be eaten plentifully without riſing in the Stomach. The Paw (which, when ſtript of the hair, looks like a Human Foot,) is accounted a delicious Morſel by all who are not Shockt at the ungracious Reſemblance it bears to a Human Foot.

There was a white Froſt this morning on the Ground, occaſion'd by a North-Weſt Wind, which ſtood our Friend in diſperſing all Aguiſh Damps, and making the Air wholſome at the Same time that it made it cold. Encourag'd therefore by Oct. 1

1729 Oct. the Weather, Our Surveyors got to work early, and by the Benefit of Clear Woods, and Level Ground, drove the Line 12 Miles and 12 Poles.

At a Small Diſtance from our Camp we croſt Great Creek, and about 7 Miles farther Nut-buſh Creek, ſo call'd from the many Hazle-Trees growing upon it. By good Luck Many Branches of theſe Creeks were full of Reeds, to the great comfort of our Horſes. Near five Miles from thence we encampt on a Branch that runs into Nut-Buſh Creek, where thoſe Reeds flouriſht more than Ordinary. The Land we marcht over was for the moſt part broken and Stony, and in ſome places cover'd over with Thickets almoſt impenetrable.

At Night the Surveyors, taking Advantage of a very clear Sky, made a third Tryal of the Variation, and found it Still ſomething leſs than 3 Degrees, ſo that it did not diminiſh by advancing towards the Weſt, or by approaching the Mountains, nor yet by encreaſing our diſtance from the Sea; but remain'd much the Same we had found it at Corotuck-Inlet.

One of our Indians kill'd a large Fawn, which was very welcome, tho', like Hudibras's Horſe, it had hardly fleſh Enough to cover its Bones.

In the low Grounds the Carolina Gentlemen ſhew'd us another Plant, which they ſaid was uſed in their country to cure the Bite of the Rattle-Snake. It put forth Several Leaves in figure like a Heart, and was clouded ſo like the common Aſſarabacca, that I conceived it to be of that Family.

2 So Soon as the Horſes cou'd be found, we hurry'd away the Surveyors, who advanct the line 9 Miles and 254 Poles. About 3 Miles from the Camp they croſſt a large Creek, which the Indians call'd Maſſamoni, Signifying, in their Language, Paint-Creek, becauſe of the great Quantity of Red ochre found in its banks. This in every Freſh tinges the Water juſt as the ſame Mineral did formerly, and to this day continues to tinge, the

famous River Adonis, in Phœnicia, by which there hangs a celebrated Fable. 1729 Oct.

Three Miles beyond that we paſt another Water with difficulty, call'd Yaypatſco, or Bever Creek. Thoſe induſtrious Animals had damm'd up the water ſo high, that we had much ado to get over. Tis hardly credible how much work of this kind they will do in the Space of one Night. They bite young Saplings into proper Lengths with their Fore-teeth, which are exceeding Strong and Sharp, and afterwards drag them to the Place where they intend to Stop the Water.

Then they know how to join Timber and Earth together with ſo much Skill, that their Work is able to reſiſt the moſt violent Flood that can happen. In this they are qualify'd to inſtruct their Betters, it being certain their damms will ſtand firm when the Strongeſt that are made by men will be carry'd down the Stream.

We obſerved very broad low Grounds upon this Creek, with a growth of large Trees, and all the other Signs of Fertility, but ſeem'd ſubject to be every where overflow'd in a freſh.

The certain way to catch theſe Sagacious Animals is thus: Squeeze all the Juice out of the large Pride of the Beaver, and 6 Drops out of the ſmall Pride. Powder the inward Bark of Saſſafras, and mix it with this Juice, then bait therewith a Steel Trap, and they will eagerly come to it, and be taken.

About three Miles and an half farther we came to the Banks of another creek, call'd, in the Saponi Language, Ohimpa-moni, Signifying Jumping Creek, from the frequent Jumping of Fiſh during the Spring Seaſon.

Here we encampt, and by the time the Horſes were hobbled, our Hunters brought us no leſs than a Brace and a half of Deer, which made great Plenty, and conſequently great content in our Quarters.

Some of our People had Shot a great Wild Cat, which was

1729 Oct. that fatal moment making a comfortable Meal upon a Fox-Squirrel, and an Ambitious Sportſman of our Company claim'd the merit of killing this monſter after it was dead.

The Wild-cat is as big again as any Houſehold-Cat, and much the fierceſt Inhabitant of the Woods. Whenever 'tis diſabled, it will tear its own Fleſh for madneſs. Altho' a Panther will run away from a Man, a Wild-cat will only make a Surly Retreat, now and then facing about, if he be too cloſely purſued; and will even purſue in his turn, if he obſerve the leaſt Sign of Fear or even of caution in thoſe that pretend to follow Him.

The Fleſh of this beaſt, as well as of the Panther, is as white as veal, and altogether as ſweet and delicious.

3 We got to work early this Morning, and carry'd the line 8 Miles and a 160 Poles. We forded Several Runs of Excellent Water, and afterwards traverſt a large levil of high land full of lofty Walnut, Poplar, and White Oak Trees, which are certain Proofs of a fruitful Soil. This levil was near two Miles in length, and of an unknown breadth, quite out of Danger of being overflow'd, which is a misfortune moſt of the Low Grounds are liable to in thoſe Parts. As we marcht along we ſaw many Buffalo-Tracks, and abundance of their Dung very Freſh, but could not have the pleaſure of ſeeing them. They either Smelt us out, having that ſenſe very Quick, or elſe were alarm'd at the Noiſe that ſo many People muſt neceſſarily make in marching along. At the Sight of a Man they will Snort and Grunt, cock up their ridiculous Short Tails, and tear up the Ground with a Sort of Timorous Fury.

Theſe wild Cattle hardly ever range alone, but herd together like thoſe that are tame. They are Seldom ſeen ſo far North as 40° of latitude, delighting much in canes and Reeds, which grow generally more Southerly.

We quarter'd on the Banks of a Creek that the Inhabitants call Tewahominy, or Tuſkarooda creek, becauſe one of that

Nation had been kill'd thereabouts, and his Body thrown into the Creek. 1729 Oct.

Our people had the Fortune to kill a Brace of does, one of which we preſented to the Carolina-Gentlemen, who were glad to partake of the Bounty of Providence, at the ſame time that they ſneer'd at us for depending upon it.

We hurry'd away the Surveyors about 9 this Morning, who extended the Line 7 Miles and 160 Poles, notwithſtanding the Ground was exceedingly uneaven. At the Diſtance of five Miles we forded a Stream to which we gave the Name of Blewing creek, becauſe of the great Number of thoſe Fowls that then frequented it. 4

About 2½ Miles beyond that, we came upon Sugar-Tree-Creek, ſo call'd from the many Trees of that kind that grow upon it. By tapping this Tree, in the firſt Warm weather in February, One may get from 20 to 40 Gallons of Liquor, very ſweet to the taſt and agreeable to the Stomach. This may be boil'd into moloſſes firſt, and afterwards into very good Sugar, allowing about 10 Gallons of the Liquor to make a Pound. There's no doubt, too, that a very fine Spirit may be diſtill'd from the moloſſes, at leaſt as good as Rum. The Sugar Tree delights only in Rich Ground, where it grows very tall, and by the Softneſs and Spunginеſs of the Wood ſhou'd be a quick Grower.

Near this Creek we diſcovered likewiſe Several Spice-Trees, the Leaves of which are fragrant, and the Berries they bear are black when dry, and of a hot taſt, not much unlike Pepper.

The low Grounds upon the creek are very wide, ſometimes on one Side, Sometimes on the Other; tho' moſt commonly upon the Oppoſite Shore the high-land advances cloſe to the Bank, only on the North-Side of the Line it ſpreads itſelf into a great Breadth of rich low Ground on both ſides the Creek for four Miles together, as far as this Stream runs into Hico-River, whereof I ſhall preſently make mention.

1729 Oct. One of our Men Spy'd three Buffaloes, but his Piece being loaded only with Gooſe-ſhot, he was able to make no effectual Impreſſion on their thick hides; however, this Diſappointment was made up by a Brace of Bucks, and as many Wild Turkeys, kill'd by the reſt of the company.

Thus Providence was very Bountiful to our Endeavours, never diſappointing thoſe that faithfully rely upon it, and pray heartily for their Daily Bread.

This day we met with ſuch uneven Grounds, and thick Underwoods, that with all our Induſtry we were able to advance the Line but 4 Miles and 312 Poles. In this ſmall Diſtance it interſected a large ſtream four times, which our Indian at firſt miſtook for the South Branch of Roanoke River; but, diſcovering his Error ſoon after, he aſſured us 'twas a River called Hicootomony, or Turkey-Buzzard River, from the great Number of thoſe unſavoury Birds that rooſt on the tall Trees growing near its banks.

Early in the Afternoon, to our very great ſurprize, the Commiſſioners of Carolina acquainted us with their Reſolution to return Home. This Declaration of theirs ſeem'd the more abrupt, becauſe they had not been ſo kind as to prepare us, by the leaſt Hint, of their Intention to deſert us.

We therefore let them underſtand they Appear'd to us to abandon the Buſineſs they came about with too much Precipitation, this being but the 15th day ſince we came out the laſt time. But, altho' we were to be ſo unhappy as to loſe the Aſſiſtance of their great Abilities, yet we, who were concern'd for Virginia, determin'd by the Grace of God, not to do our Work by Halves, but, all deſerted as we were like to be, ſhou'd think it our duty to puſh the Line quite to the Mountains; and if their Government ſhould refuſe to be bound by ſo much of the Line as was run without their Commiſſioners, yet at leaſt it would bind Vir-

ginia, and Stand as a Direction how far his Majeſty's Lands extend to the Southward. 1729 Oct.

In ſhort, theſe Gentlemen were poſitive, and the moſt we could agree upon was to Subſcribe plats of our work as far as we had Acted together; tho' at the ſame time we inſiſted theſe Plats ſhould be got ready by Monday Noon at fartheſt, when we on the Part of Virginia intended, if we were alive, to move forward without farther loſs of Time, the Seaſon being then too far advanct to admit of any unneceſſary or complaiſant delays.

We lay ſtill this-day, being Sunday, on the Bank of Hico River, and had only Prayers, our Chaplain not having Spirits enough to preach. The Gentlemen of Carolina aſſiſted not at our Publick Devotions, becauſe they were taken up all the Morning in making a formidable Proteſt againſt our Proceeding on the Line without them. 6

When the Divine Service was over, the Surveyors ſat about making the Plats of ſo much of the Line as we had run this laſt Campaign. Our pious Friends of Carolina aſſiſted in this work with ſome Seeming Scruple, pretending it was a Violation of the Sabbath, which we were the more Surpriz'd at, becauſe it happen'd to be the firſt Qualm of Conſcience they had ever been troubled with dureing the whole journey. They had made no Bones of Staying from Prayers to hammer out an unneceſſary Proteſt, tho' Divine Service was no Sooner over, but an unuſual Fit of Godlineſs made them fancy that finiſhing the plats, which was now matter of neceſſity, was a prophanation of the Day. However, the Expediency of loſing no time, for us who thought it our duty to finiſh what we had undertaken, made ſuch a Labour pardonnable.

In the Afternoon, Mr. Fitz William, one of the Commiſſioners for Virginia, acquainted his Collegues it was his Opinion, that by his Majeſty's Order they could not proceed farther on the Line, but in Conjunction with the Commiſſioners of Carolina;

1729 Oct. for which reaſon he intended to retire, the Next Morning, with thoſe Gentlemen.

This lookt a little odd in our Brother Commiſſioner; tho', in Juſtice to Him, as well as to our Carolina Friends, they ſtuck by us as long as our good Liquor laſted, and were ſo kind to us as to drink our good Journey to the Mountains in the laſt Bottle we had left.

7 The Duplicates of the plats cou'd not be drawn fair this day before Noon, when they were counterſign'd by the Commiſſioners of Each Government. Then thoſe of Carolina deliver'd their Proteſt, which was by this time lickt into form, and ſign'd by them all. And we have been ſo juſt to them as to ſet it down at full length in the Appendix, that their Reaſons for leaving us may appear in their full Strength.

After having thus adjuſted all our Affairs with the Carolina Commiſſioners, and kindly ſupply'd them with Bread to carry them back, which they hardly deſerv'd at our hands, we took leave both of them and our colleague, Mr. Fitzwilliam.

This Gentleman had ſtil a Stronger Reaſon for hurrying him back to Williamſburg, which was, that neither the General Court might loſe an able Judge, nor himſelf a double Salary, not deſpairing in the leaſt but he ſhou'd have the whole pay of Commiſſioner into the Bargain, tho' he did not half the Work. This, to be ſure, was relying more on the Intereſt of his Friends than on the Juſtice of his cauſe; in which, however, he had the misfortune to miſcarry, when it came to be fairly conſidered.

It was two a clock in the Afternoon before theſe arduous Affairs could be deſpatcht, and then, all forſaken as we were, we held on our courſe towards the Weſt. But it was our misfortune to meet with ſo many Thickets in this Afternoon's Work, that we cou'd advance no further than 2 Miles and 260 Poles.

In this ſmall Diſtance we croſſt the Hico the fifth time, and

Quarter'd near Buffalo-Creek, ſo nam'd from the frequent Tokens we diſcover'd of that American Behemoth. 1729 Oct.

Here the Buſhes were ſo intolerably thick, that we were oblig'd to cover the Bread Baggs with our Deer Skins, otherwiſe the Joke of one of the Indians muſt have happen'd to us in good Earneſt, that in a few days We muſt cut up our Houſe to make Bags for the Bread, and ſo be forct to expoſe our Backs in compliment to our Bellys.

We computed we had then Biſquet enough left to laſt us, with good Management, Seven Weeks longer; And this being our chief Dependence, it imported us to be very careful both in the Carriage and the Diſtribution of it.

We had no other Drink but what Adam drank in Paradiſe, tho' to our comfort we found the Water excellent, by the Help of which we perceiv'd our Appetites to Mend, our Slumbers to Sweeten, the Stream of Life to run cool and peaceably in our Veins, and if ever we dreamt of Women, they were kind.

Our men kill'd a very fat Buck and Several Turkeys. Theſe two kinds of Meat boil'd together, with the Addition of a little Rice or French Barley, made excellent Soupe, and, what happens rarely in Other good things, it never cloy'd, no more than an Engaging Wife wou'd do, by being a Conſtant Diſh.

Our Indian was very Superſtitious in this Matter, and told us, with a face full of concern, that if we continued to boil Veniſon and Turkey together, we Shou'd for the future kill nothing, becauſe the Spirit that preſided over the Woods would drive all the Game out of our Sight. But we had the Happineſs to find this an Idle Superſtition, and tho' his Argument could not convince us, yet our repeated Experience at laſt, with much ado, convinc'd Him.

We obſerv'd abundance of Colt's foot and Maiden-hair in many Places, and no where a larger Quantity than here. They

1729 Oct. are both Excellent Pectoral Plants, and ſeem to have greater Vertues much in this part of the World than in more Northern climates; and I believe it may paſs for a Rule in Botanicks, that where any Vegetable is planted by the hand of Nature, it has more Vertue than in Places whereto it is tranſplanted by the Curioſity of Man.

8 Notwithſtanding we hurry'd away the Surveyors very early, yet the Underwoods embarraſſ'd them ſo much that they cou'd with Difficulty advance the Line 4 Miles and 20 Poles.

Our Cloaths Suffer'd extreamely by the Buſhes, and it was really as much as both our hands could do to preſerve our Eyes in our Heads. Our poor Horſes, too, could hardly drag their Loads thro' the Saplings, which ſtood ſo cloſe together that it was neceſſary for them to draw and carry at the ſame time.

We quarter'd near a Spring of very fine Water, Soft as oyl and as cold as Ice, to make us amends for the want of Wine. And our Indian knockt down a very fat Doe, juſt time enough to hinder us from going Supperleſs to Bed.

The heavy Baggage cou'd not come up with us, becauſe of the Exceſſive badneſs of the Ways. This gave us no Small uneaſineſs, but it went worſe with the poor men that guarded it. They had nothing in the World with them but dry Bread, nor durſt they eat any of that, for fear of inflaming their Thirſt, in a Place where they could find no Water to quench it.

This was, however, the better to be endured, becauſe it was the firſt Faſt any one had kept dureing the whole Journey, and then, Thanks to the gracious Guardian of the Woods! there was no more than a Single Meal loſt to a few of the Company.

We were entertain'd this Night with the Yell of a whole Family of Wolves, in which we cou'd diſtinguiſh the Treble, Tenor and Baſs, very clearly. Theſe Beaſts of Prey kept pretty much upon our Track, being tempted by the Garbage of

the Creatures we kill'd every day ; for which we were Serenaded with their Shrill Pipes almoſt every Night. This Beaſt is not ſo untameable as the Panther, but the Indians know how to gentle their Whelps, and uſe them about their cabans inſtead of Dogs. 1729 Oct.

The Thickets were hereabouts ſo impenetrable, that we were obliged, at firſt ſetting off this Morning, to order four Pioneers to clear the way before the Surveyors. But after about 2 Miles of theſe rough-woods, we had the Pleaſure to meet with Open Grounds and not very uneven, by the help of which we were enabled to puſh the Line about 6 Miles. 9

The Baggage that lay Short of our camp laſt Night came up about Noon, and the Men made heavy Complaints, that they had been half Starv'd, like Tantalus, in the midſt of plenty, for the Reaſon above mention'd.

The Soil we paſt over this Day was generally very good, being cloath'd with large Trees, of Poplar, Hiccory, and Oak. But another certain Token of its Fertility was, that wild Angelica grew plentifully upon it.

The Root of this Plant, being very warm and Aromatick, is coveted by Woodſmen extremely as a dry Dram, that is, when Rum, that cordial for all Diſtreſſes, is wanting.

Several Deer came into our View as we marcht along, but none into the Pot, which made it neceſſary for us to ſup on the Fragments we had been ſo provident as to carry along with us. This being but a temperate Repaſt, made ſome of our hungry Fellows call the Place we lodg'd at that Night, Bread and Water Camp.

A great Flock of Cranes flew over our Quarters, that were exceeding Clamorous in their Flight. They ſeem to ſteer their Courſe towards the South (being Birds of Paſſage) in Queſt of Warmer Weather. They only took this Country in their way,

1729 Oct. being as rarely met with, in this part of the World, as a Highwayman or a Beggar.

Theſe Birds travel generally in Flocks, and when they rooſt they place Sentinels upon ſome of the higheſt Trees, which conſtantly ſtand upon one leg to keep themſelves waking.[1]

Our Indian kill'd nothing all day but a Mountain Patridge, which a little reſembled the common Partridge in the Plumage, but was near as large as a Dunghill Hen. Theſe are very frequent towards the Mountains, tho' we had the fortune to meet with very few. They are apt to be Shy, and conſequently the Noiſe of ſo great a Number of People might eaſily Scare them away from our Sight.

We found what we conceiv'd to be Good Limeſtone in ſeveral Places, and a great Quantity of Blue Slate.

10 The day began very fortunately by killing a Fat Doe, and Two Brace of wild Turkeys; ſo the Plenty of the Morning made amends for the Short Commons over Night. One of the new men we brought out with us the laſt time was unfortunately heard to wiſh himſelf at Home, and for that Shew of Impatience was publickly reprimanded at the Head of the men, who were all drawn up to witneſs his Diſgrace.

He was aſkt how he came ſo ſoon to be tired of the Company of ſo many brave Fellows, and whether it was the Danger or

[1] Nor are theſe Birds the only Animals that appoint Scouts to keep the main Body from being ſurpriz'd. For the Baboons, whenever they go upon any miſchievous Expedition, ſuch as robbing an Orchard, they place centinels to look out towards every Point of the Compaſs, and give notice of any danger. Then ranking themſelves in one File, that reaches from the mountain where they harbour, to the Orchard they intend to rob, ſome of them toſs the Fruits from the Trees to thoſe that ſtand neareſt, theſe throw them to the next, and ſo from one to tother, til the fruit is all ſecured in a few Minutes out of Harm's way. In the mean time, if any of the Scouts ſhould be careleſs at their Poſts & Suffer any Surprize, they are torn to pieces without Mercy. In caſe of danger theſe centinels Set up a fearful cry, upon which the reſt take the alarm, and Scour away to the Mountains as faſt as they can.

the Fatigue of the Journey that diſhearten'd Him? This publick Reproof from thenceforward put an effectual Stop to all complaints, and not a man amongſt us after that pretended ſo much as to wiſh himſelf in Paradiſe. 1729 Oct.

A Small Diſtance from our Camp we croſſt a pleaſant Stream of Water call'd Cocquade Creek, and ſomething more than a Mile from thence our Line interſected the South Branch of Roanoak River the firſt time, which we call'd the Dan. It was about 200 Yards wide where we forded it, and when we came over to the Weſt Side, we found the Banks lin'd with a Foreſt of Tall canes, that grew more than a furlong in depth. So that it coſt us abundance of time and Labour to cut a Paſſage thro' them wide enough for our Baggage.

In the mean time we had leizure to take a full view of this charming River. The Stream, which was perfectly clear, ran down about two Knots, or two Miles, an Hour, when the water was at the loweſt. The Bottom was cover'd with a coarſe Gravel, Spangled very thick with a Shining Subſtance, that almoſt dazzled the eye, and the Sand upon either Shore Sparkled with the ſame Splendid Particles.

At firſt Sight, the Sun-Beams giving a Yellow caſt to theſe Spangles made us fancy them to be Gold-Duſt, and conſequently that all our Fortunes were made. Such Hopes as theſe were the leſs extravagant, becauſe ſeveral Rivers lying much about the Same Latitude with this have formerly abounded with Fragments of that tempting Metal. Witneſs the Tagus in Portugal, the Heber in Thrace, and the Pactolus in Leſſer Aſia; Not to mention the Rivers on the Gold Coaſt in Africa, which ly in a more Southern Climate.

But we ſoon found our Selves miſtaken, and our Gold Duſt dwindled into ſmall Flakes of iſingglaſs. However, tho' this did not make the River ſo rich as we cou'd wiſh, yet it made it exceedingly Beautiful.

1729 Oct. We marcht about two Miles and a half beyond this River, as far as Cane Creek, ſo call'd from a Prodigious Quantity of tall canes that fring'd the Banks of it.

On the Weſt ſide of this Creek we markt out our Quarters, and were glad to find our Horſes fond of the canes, tho' they Scowred them ſmartly at firſt, and diſcolor'd their Dung. This beautiful Vegetable grows commonly from 12 to 16 feet High, and ſome of them as thick as a Man's wriſt.

Tho' theſe appear'd large to us, yet they are no more than Spires of Graſs, if compar'd to thoſe which ſome curious Travellers tell us grow in the Eaſt Indies, one Joint of which will make a Brace of Canoes, if ſaw'd in two in the Middle. Ours continue green thro' all the Seaſons during the Space of Six Years, and the Seventh ſhed their Seed, wither away and Die. The Spring following they begin to Shoot again, and reach their former Stature the Second or third Year after.

They grow ſo thick, and their Roots lace together ſo firmly, that they are the beſt Guard that can be of the River-Bank, which wou'd otherwiſe be waſht away by the frequent Inundations that happen in this part of the World.

They would alſo ſerve excellently well to plant on the Borders of Fiſh-Ponds and Canals, to ſecure their ſides from falling in; tho' I fear they would not grow kindly in a cold Country, being ſeldom ſeen here ſo Northerly as 38 Degrees of Latitude.

11 At the Diſtance of 4 Miles and 60 Poles from the Place where we encampt, we came upon the River Dan a Second time; tho' It was not ſo wide in this Place as where we croſſt it firſt, being not above a 150 yards over.

The Weſt Shore continued to be cover'd with the Canes above mention'd, but not to ſo great a Breadth as before, and 'tis Remarkable that theſe canes are much more frequent on the Weſt Side of the River than on the Eaſt, where they grow generally very ſcattering.

It was Still a beautiful Stream, rolling down its limpid and murmuring waters among the Rocks, which lay ſcatter'd here and there, to make up the variety of the Proſpect. 1729 Oct.

It was about two Miles from this River to the End of our Day's Work, which led us moſtly over Broken Grounds and troubleſome Underwoods. Hereabout, from one of the Higheſt hills, we made the firſt Diſcovery of the Mountains, on the North-weſt of our courſe. They ſeem'd to lye off at a vaſt Diſtance, and lookt like Ranges of Blue clouds riſing one above another.

We encampt about two Miles beyond the River, where we made good chear upon a very fat Buck, that luckily fell in our way. The Indian likewiſe Shot a Wild Turkey, but confeſſt he wou'd not bring it us, leſt we ſhou'd continue to provoke the Guardian of the Forreſt, by cooking the Beaſts of the Field and the Birds of the Air together in one veſſel.

This Inſtance of Indian Superſtition, I confeſs, is countenanced in ſome meaſure by the Levitical Law, which forbad the mixing of things of a Different Nature together in the Same field, or in the Same Garment, and why not then in the ſame Kettle?

But, after all, if the Jumbleing of two Sorts of Fleſh together be a Sin, how intolerable an Offence muſt it be to make a Spaniſh Ole, that is, a Hotchpotch of every kind of thing that is eatable? And the good People of England wou'd have a great deal to anſwer for, for beating up ſo many different Ingredients into a Pudding.

We were ſo cruelly intangled with Buſhes and Grape-Vines all day, that we could advance the Line no farther than 5 Miles and 28 Poles. 12

The Vines grow very thick in theſe Woods, twineing lovingly round the Trees almoſt every where, eſpecially to the Saplings. This makes it evident how Natural both the Soil and Climate

1729 Oct. of this Country are to Vines, tho' I believe moſt to our own Vines.

The Grapes we commonly met with were black, tho' there be two or three kinds of White Grapes that grow wild. The Black are very Sweet, but Small, becauſe the Strength of the Vine ſpends itſelf in Wood; tho' without Queſtion a proper Culture would make the ſame Grapes both larger and Sweeter. But, with all theſe Diſadvantages, I have Drunk tolerable good Wine preſt from them, tho' made without Skill. There is then good Reaſon to believe it might Admit of great Improvement, if rightly managed.

Our Indian kill'd a Bear, of two years old, that was feaſting on theſe Grapes. He was very fat, as they generally are in that ſeaſon of the year. In the fall, the Fleſh of this Animal has a high Reliſh, different from that of other Creatures, tho' inclining neareſt to that of Pork, or rather of Wild Boar.

A true Woodſman prefers this Sort of meat to that of the fatteſt Veniſon, not only for the *Haut-gout*, but alſo becauſe the Fat of it is well taſted, and never riſes in the ſtomach. Another proof of the goodneſs of this meat is, that it is leſs apt to corrupt than any other we are acquainted with. As agreeable as ſuch rich Diet was to the men, yet we who were not accuſtom'd to it, taſted it at firſt with ſome ſort of Squeamiſhneſs, that Animal being of the Dog-kind; tho' a little Uſe ſoon reconcil'd us to this American Veniſon. And that its being of the Dog kind might give us the leſs diſguſt, we had the Example of that Ancient and polite People, the Chineſe, who reckon Dog's Fleſh too good for any under the Quality of a mandarin.

This Beaſt is in truth a very clean Feeder, living, while the Seaſon laſts, upon Acorns, Cheſnuts and Chinkapins, Wild-Hony and Wild-Grapes. They are naturally not carnivorous, unleſs Hunger conſtrain them to it, after the Maſt is all gone, and the Products of the Woods quite exhauſted.

1729 Oct.

They are not provident enough to lay up any Hoard, like the Squirrels, nor can they, after all, live very long upon licking their Paws, as Sr John Mandevil and ſome Travellers tell us, but are forct in the Winter Months to quit the Mountains, and viſit the Inhabitants.

Their Errand is then to Surpriſe a poor Hog at a Pinch to keep them from Starving. And to ſhew that they are not Fleſh-Eaters by Trade, they devour their Prey very awkwardly.

They don't kill it right out, and feaſt upon its Blood and Entrails, like other ravenous Beaſts, but having, after a fair purſuit, ſeiz'd it with their Paws, they begin firſt upon the Rump, and ſo devour one collop after another, till they come to the Vitals, the poor Animal crying all the while, for ſeveral Minutes together. However, in ſo doing, Bruin acts a little imprudently, becauſe the diſmal outcry of the Hog alarms the Neighbourhood, and 'tis odds but he pays the forfeit with his Life, before he can Secure his Retreat.

But Bears ſoon grow weary of this unnatural Diet, and about January, when there is nothing to be got in the Woods, they retire into ſome cave or hollow Tree, where they Sleep away two or three Months very comfortably. But then they quit their Holes in March, when the Fiſh begin to run up the Rivers, on which they are forct to keep Lent, till ſome Fruit or Berry comes in Seaſon.

But Bears are fondeſt of cheſnuts, which grow plentifully towards the Mountains, upon very large Trees, where the Soil happens to be rich. We were curious to know how it happen'd that many of the outward Branches of thoſe Trees came to be brok off in that Solitary Place, and were inform'd that the Bears are ſo diſcreet as not to truſt their unwieldy Bodies on the Smaller Limbs of the Tree, that would not bear their weight; but after venturing as far as is ſafe, which they can judge to an Inch, they bite off the End of the Branch, which falling down, they are

1729 Oct. content to finiſh their Repaſt upon the Ground. In the ſame Cautious Manner they ſecure the Acorns that grow on the weaker Limbs of the Oak. And it muſt be allow'd that, in theſe Inſtances, a Bear carries Inſtinct a great way, and Acts more reaſonably than many of his Betters, who indiſcreetly Venture upon frail Projects that wont bear them.

13 This being Sunday, we reſted from our Fatigue, and had leiſure to reflect on the ſignal Mercies of Providence.

The great Plenty of Meat wherewith Bearſkin furniſht us in theſe lonely Woods made us once more Shorten the men's allowance of Bread, from 5 to 4 Pounds of biſket a week. This was the more neceſſary, becauſe we knew not yet how long our Buſineſs might require us to be out.

In the Afternoon our Hunters went forth, and return'd triumphantly with three brace of wild Turkeys. They told us they cou'd ſee the Mountains diſtinctly from every Eminence, tho' the Atmoſphere was ſo thick with Smoak that they appear'd at a greater Diſtance than they really were.

In the Evening we examin'd our Friend Bearſkin, concerning the Religion of his Country, and he explain'd it to us, without any of that Reſerve to which his Nation is Subject.

He told us he believ'd there was one Supreme God, who had Several Subaltern Deities under Him. And that this Maſter-God made the World a long time ago. That he told the Sun, the Moon, and Stars, their Buſineſs in the Beginning, which they, with good looking after, have faithfully perform'd ever Since.

That the ſame Power that made all things at firſt has taken care to keep them in the ſame Method and Motion ever ſince.

He believ'd God had form'd many Worlds before he form'd this, but that thoſe Worlds either grew old and ruinous, or were deſtroyed for the Diſhoneſty of the Inhabitants.

That God is very juſt and very good—ever well pleaſ'd with thoſe men who poſſeſs thoſe God-like Qualities. That he takes good People into his ſafe Protection, makes them very rich, fills their Bellies plentifully, preſerves them from ſickneſs, and from being ſurpriz'd or Overcome by their Enemies. 1729 Oct.

But all ſuch as tell Lies, and Cheat thoſe they have Dealings with, he never fails to puniſh with Sickneſs, Poverty and Hunger, and, after all that, Suffers them to be knockt on the Head and ſcalpt by thoſe that fight againſt them.

He believ'd that after Death both good and bad People are conducted by a ſtrong Guard into a great Road, in which departed Souls travel together for ſome time, till at a certain Diſtance this Road forks into two Paths, the one extremely Levil, and the other Stony and Mountainous.

Here the good are parted from the Bad by a flaſh of Lightening, the firſt being hurry'd away to the Right, the other to the Left. The Right hand Road leads to a charming warm Country, where the Spring is everlaſting, and every Month is May; and as the year is always in its Youth, ſo are the People, and particularly the Women are bright as Stars, and never Scold.

That in this happy Climate there are Deer, Turkeys, Elks, and Buffaloes innumerable, perpetually fat and gentle, while the Trees are loaded with delicious Fruit quite throughout the four Seaſons.

That the Soil brings forth Corn Spontaneouſly, without the Curſe of Labour, and ſo very wholeſome, that None who have the happineſs to eat of it are ever Sick, grow old, or dy.

Near the Entrance into this Bleſſed Land Sits a Venerable Old Man on a Mat richly woven, who examins Strictly all that are brought before Him, and if they have behav'd well, the Guards are order'd to open the Cryſtal Gate, and let them enter into the Land of Delights.

1729 Oct. The left Hand Path is very rugged and uneaven, leading to a dark and barren Country, where it is always Winter. The Ground is the whole year round cover'd with Snow, and nothing is to be ſeen upon the Trees but Icicles.

All the People are hungry, yet have not a Morſel of any thing to eat, except a bitter kind of Potato, that gives them the Dry-Gripes, and fills their whole Body with loathſome Ulcers, that Stink, and are inſupportably painfull.

Here all the Women are old and ugly, having Claws like a Panther, with which they fly upon the Men that Slight their Paſſion. For it ſeems theſe haggard old Furies are intolerably fond, and expect a vaſt deal of Cheriſhing. They talk much, and exceedingly Shrill, giving exquiſite Pain to the Drum of the Ear, which in that Place of the Torment is ſo tender, that every Sharp Note wounds it to the Quick.

At the End of this Path ſits a dreadful Old Woman on a monſtrous Toad-Stool, whoſe head is cover'd with Rattle-Snakes inſtead of Treſſes, with glaring white Eyes, that ſtrike a Terror unſpeakable into all that behold her.

This Hag pronounces Sentence of Woe upon all the miſerable Wretches that hold up their hands at her Tribunal. After this they are deliver'd over to huge Turkey-Buzzards, like harpys, that fly away with them to the Place above mentioned.

Here, after they have been tormented a certain Number of years, according to their ſeveral Degrees of Guilt, they are again driven back into this World, to try if they will mend their Manners, and merit a place the next time in the Regions of Bliſs.

This was the Subſtance of Bearſkin's Religion, and was as much to the purpoſe as cou'd be expected from a meer State of Nature, without one Glimps of Revelation or Philoſophy.

It contain'd, however, the three Great Articles of Natural Religion: The Belief of a God; The Moral Diſtinction betwixt Good and Evil; and the Expectation of Rewards and Puniſhments in Another World. 1729 Oct.

Indeed, the Indian Notion of a Future Happineſs is a little Groſs and Senſual, like Mahomet's Paradiſe. But how can it be otherwiſe, in a People that are contented with Nature as they find Her, and have no other Lights but what they receive from purblind Tradition?

There having been great Signs of Rain yeſterday Evening, 14 we had taken our Precautions in Securing the Bread, and trenching in our Tent.

The men had alſo Stretcht their Blankets upon Poles, Penthouſe faſhion, againſt the Weather, ſo that nobody was taken unprepar'd.

It began to fall heavily about three a'clock in the Morning, and held not up till near Noon. Every thing was ſo thoroughly Soakt, that we laid aſide all thoughts of decamping that Day.

This gave leizure to the moſt expert of our Gunners to go and try their Fortunes, and they ſucceeded ſo well, that they return'd about Noon with three fat Deer, and 4 wild Turkeys. Thus Providence took care of us, and however ſhort the Men might be in their Bread, 'tis certain they had Meat at full Allowance.

The Cookery went on merrily all Night long, to keep the Damps from entering our Pores; and in truth the Impreſſions of the Air are much more powerfull upon empty Stomachs.

In ſuch a Glut of Proviſions, a true Woodſman, when he has nothing elſe to do, like our honeſt countrymen the Indians, keeps eating on, to avoid the imputation of Idleneſs; Though, in a Scarcity, the Indian will faſt with a much better Grace than they. They can Subſiſt Several days upon a little Rockahominy, which is parcht Indian Corn reduc'd to powder. This they

1729 Oct. moiſten in the hollow of their Hands with a little water, and 'tis hardly credible how ſmall a Quantity of it will Support them. Tis true they grow a little lank upon it, but to make themſelves feel full, they gird up their Loins very tight with a Belt, taking up a Hole every day. With this Slender Subſiſtence they are able to travel very long Journeys; but then, to make themſelves Amends, when they do meet with better Chear, they eat without ceaſing, till they have raven'd themſelves into another Famine.

This was the firſt time we had ever been detain'd a whole day in our camp by the Rain, and therefore had Reaſon to bear it with the more patience.

As I ſat in the Tent I overheard a learn'd converſation between one of our men and the Indian. He aſk't the Engliſhman what it was that made that rumbling noiſe when it thunder'd?

The man told him merrily, that the God of the Engliſh was firing his great Guns upon the God of the Indians, which made all the roaring in the clouds, and that the Lightening was only the Flaſh of thoſe Guns.

The Indian carrying on the Humour reply'd very gravely, He believed that might be the caſe indeed, and that the Rain which follow'd upon the Thunder muſt be occaſion'd by the Indian God's being ſo ſcar'd he could not hold his Water.

The few good Huſbands amongſt us took ſome thought of their Backs as well as their Bellies, and made uſe of this Opportunity to put their Habiliments in repair, which had Suffer'd wofully by the Buſhes.

The Horſes got ſome reſt, by reaſon of the bad weather, but very little Food, the chief of their Forage being a little wild Roſemary, which reſembles the Garden Roſemary pretty much in Figure, but not at all in taſte or ſmell. This Plant grows in ſmall Tufts here and there on the Barren Land in theſe upper

Parts, and the Horſes liked it well, but the misfortune was, they cou'd not get enough of it to fill their Bellies. 1729 Oct.

After the Clouds brake away in the Morning, the People dryed their Blankets with all diligence. Nevertheleſs, it was Noon before we were in condition to move forward, and then were ſo puzzled with paſſing the river twice in a Small Diſtance, that we could advance the Line in all no farther than One Single Mile and 300 Poles. 15

The firſt time we paſt the Dan this day was 240 Poles from the Place where we lay, and the Second time was one Mile and Seven Poles beyond that. This was now the fourth time we forded that fine River, which ſtill tended weſterly, with many Short and returning Reaches.

The Surveyors had much Difficulty in getting over the River, finding it deeper than formerly. The Breadth of it here did not exceed fifty Yards. The Banks were about 20 feet high from the Water, and beautifully beſet with canes.

Our Baggage Horſes croſt not the River here at all, but, fetching a compaſs, went round the Bent of it. On our Way we forded Sable-Creek, ſo call'd from the Dark Colour of the Water, which happen'd, I ſuppoſe, by its being Shaded on both Sides with canes.

In the Evening we quarter'd in a Charming Situation near the angle of the River, from whence our Eyes were carried down both Reaches, which kept a Straight Courſe for a great way together.

This Proſpect was ſo beautiful, that we were perpetually climbing up to a Neighbouring eminence, that we might enjoy it in more Perfection.

Now the Weather grew cool, the Wild Geeſe began to direct their Flight this way from Hudſon's Bay, and the Lakes that lay North-weſt of us.

They are very lean at their firſt coming, but fatten ſoon upon

1729 Oct. a Sort of Graſs that grows on the Shores and Rocks of this River.

The Indians call this Fowl Cohunks, from the hoarſe Note it has, and begin the year from the Coming of the Cohunks, which happens in the Beginning of October.

Theſe Wild Geeſe are guarded from cold by a Down, that is exquiſitely ſoft and fine, which makes them much more valuable for their Feathers than for their Fleſh, which is dark and coarſe.

The Men chaſt a Bear into the River that got ſafe over, notwithſtanding the continual fire from the Shore upon Him. He Seem'd to Swim but heavily, conſidering it was for his Life.

Where the Water is Shallow, 'tis no Uncommon thing to ſee a Bear ſitting, in the Summer time, on a heap of Gravel in the Middle of the River, not only to cool himſelf, but likewiſe for the Advantage of Fiſhing, particularly for a ſmall Shell-fiſh, that is brought down with the Stream.

In the upper part of James River I have obſerved this Several times, and wonder'd very much, at firſt, how ſo many heaps of ſmall Stones came to be piled up in the Water, till at laſt we ſpy'd a Bear Sitting upon one of them, looking with great attention on the Stream, and rakeing up Something with his Paw, which I take to be the Shell-fiſh above mention'd.

16 It was Ten a'clock this Morning before the Horſes cou'd be found, having hidden themſelves among the canes, whereof there was great plenty juſt at hand. Not far from our camp we went over a Brook, whoſe Banks were edg'd on both Sides with theſe canes. But three Miles further we forded a larger Stream, which we call'd Low Land Creek, by reaſon of the great Breadth of Low Grounds incloſ'd between that and the River.

The high Land we travell'd over was very good, and the low Grounds promiſ'd the greateſt Fertility of any I had ever ſeen.

At the End of 4 Miles and 311 Poles from where we lay, the Line interſected the Dan the fifth time. We had day enough

to carry it farther, but the Surveyors cou'd find no Safe ford over the River. 1729 Oct.

This obliged us to ride two Miles up the River in queſt of a Ford, and by the way we traverſt Several Small Indian Fields, where we conjectur'd the SAWRO'S had been uſed to plant Corn, the Town where they had liv'd lying Seven or Eight Miles more Southerly, upon the Eaſtern Side of the River.

Theſe Indian Fields produc'd a Sweet kind of Graſs, Almoſt knee-high, which was excellent Forage for the Horſes.

It muſt be obſerv'd, by the way, that Indian Towns, like Religious Houſes, are remarkabler for a fruitful Situation; for being by Nature not very Induſtrious, they chooſe ſuch a Situation as will Subſiſt them with the leaſt Labour.

The Trees grew Surpriſeingly large in this low-Ground, and amongſt the reſt we obſerv'd a tall kind of hiccory, peculiar to the Upper Parts of the Country. It is cover'd with a very rough Bark, and produces a Nut with a thick Shell that is eaſily broken. The Kernel is not ſo rank as that of the Common Hiccory, but altogether as oily.

And now I am upon the Subject of theſe Nuts, it may not be improper to remark, that a very great benefit might be made of Nut-Oyl in this Colony. The Walnuts, the Hiccory-Nuts, and Pig-nuts, contain a vaſt deal of Oyl, that might be preſſ'd out in great abundance with proper Machines.

The Trees grow very kindly, and may be eaſily propagated. They bear plenty of Nuts every year, that are now of no other uſe in the World but to feed Hogs. 'Tis certain there is a large Conſumption of this Oyl in Several of our Manufactures, and in ſome parts of France, as well as in other Countries, it is eaten inſtead of Oyl-Olive, being tolerably Sweet and wholeſome.

The Indian kill'd a fat Buck, and the men brought in four Bears and a Brace of wild Turkeys, ſo that this was truly a Land of Plenty, both for man and Beaſt.

1729 Oct. 17 We detacht a Party of men this morning early in Search of a Ford, who after all cou'd find None that was ſafe; tho' dangerous as it was, we determin'd to make uſe of it, to avoid all further delay. Accordingly we rode over a Narrow Ledge of Rocks, Some of which lay below the Surface of the Water, and ſome above it.

Thoſe that lay under the Water were as Slippery as Ice; and the Current glided over them ſo ſwiftly, that tho' it was only Water, it made us perfectly drunk. Yet we were all ſo fortunate as to get ſafe over to the Weſt Shore, with no other Damage than the Sopping ſome of our Bread by the flounceing of the Horſes.

The tedious time Spent in finding out this Ford, and in getting all the Horſes over it, prevented our carrying the Line more than 2 Miles and 250 Poles.

This was the laſt time we croſt the Dan with our Line, which now began to run away more Southerly, with a very fluſh and plentifull Stream, the Deſcription whereof muſt be left to future Diſcoveries, tho' we are well aſſured by the Indians that it runs thro' the Mountains.

We conducted the Baggage a roundabout way for the Benefit of evener Grounds, and this carry'd us over a broad Levil of exceeding rich Land, full of large Trees, with Vines marry'd to them, if I may be allow'd to ſpeak ſo Poetically.

We untreed a young Cub in our March, that made a brave Stand againſt one of the beſt of our Dogs. This and a Fawn were all the Game that came in our way.

In this day's Journey, as in many others before, we ſaw beautiful Marble of Several Colours, and particularly that of the Purple kind with white Streaks, and in ſome places we came acroſs large pieces of pure Alabaſter.

We markt out our Quarters on the Banks of a purling Stream, which we call'd Caſquade Creek, by reaſon of the Mul

titude of Water-Falls that are in it. But, different from all other Falls that ever I met with, the Rocks over which the water roll'd were Soft, and would Split eaſily into broad Flakes, very proper for Pavement; and ſome Fragments of it ſeem'd ſoft enough for Hones, and the Grain fine enough. 1729 Oct.

Near our Camp we found a prickly Shrub, riſeing about a foot from the Ground, ſomething like that which bears the Barberry, tho' much Smaller. The Leaves had a freſh, agreeable Smell, and I am perſwaded the Ladies would be apt to fancy a Tea made of them, provided they were told how far it came, and at the Same time were obliged to buy it very dear.

About a Mile to the South-weſt of our Camp roſe a regular Mount, that commanded a full Proſpect of the Mountains, and an Extenſive View of the Flat Country. But being, with reſpect to the high Mountains, no more than a Pimple, we call'd it by that Name.

Preſently after Sunſet we diſcovered a great Light towards the Weſt, too bright for a fire, and more reſembling the Aurora Borealis. This, all our Woodſmen told us, was a Common Appearance in the High Lands, and generally foreboded bad Weather. Their Explanation happen'd to be exactly true, for in the Night we had a Violent Gale of Wind, accompany'd with Smart Hail, that rattled frightfully amongſt the Trees, tho' it was not large enough to do us any Harm.

We croſt Caſquade Creek over a Ledge of Smooth Rocks, and then Scuffled thro' a mighty Thicket, at leaſt three Miles long. The whole was one continued Tract of rich high Land, the woods whereof had been burnt not long before. It was then overgrown with Saplings of Oak, Hiccory and Locuſt, interlac'd with Grape Vines. In this fine Land, however, we met with no Water, till at the End of three Miles we luckily came upon a Chryſtal Stream, which, like ſome Lovers of Con-

1729 Oct. verſation, diſcover'd every thing committed to its faithleſs Boſom.

Then we came upon a piece of Rich Low Ground, covered with large Trees, of the extent of half a Mile, which made us fancy ourſelves not far from the River; tho' after that we aſcended gently to higher Land, with no other Trees growing upon it except Butter-wood, which is one Species of White Maple.

This being a dead Levil, without the leaſt Declivity to carry off the Water, was moiſt in many Places, and produc'd abundance of Graſs. All our Woodſmen call theſe flat Grounds High-Land-Ponds, and in their Trading Journeys are glad to halt at ſuch Places for Several days together, to recruit their Jaded Horſes, eſpecially in the Winter Months, when there is little or no Graſs to be found in other Places.

This High-Land-Pond extended above two Miles, our Palfry's Snatching greedily at the Tufts of Graſs, as they went along. After we got over this Level, we deſcended ſome Stony Hills for about half a Mile, and then came upon a large Branch of the River, which we chriſten'd the Irvin, in honour of our learned Profeſſor. This River we forded with much Difficulty and ſome Danger, by reaſon of the Hollow-Spaces betwixt the Rocks, into which our Horſes plunged almoſt every Step.

The Irvin runs into the Dan about four miles to the Southward of the Line, and ſeem'd to roll down its Waters from the N.N.W. in a very full and Limpid ſtream, and the Murmur it made, in tumbling over the Rocks, cauſ'd the Situation to appear very Romantick, and had almoſt made ſome of the Company Poetical, tho' they drank nothing but Water.

We encampt on a pleaſant Hill, overlooking the River, which ſeem'd to be deep every where except juſt where we forded. In the mean time, neither that Chain of Rocks, nor any

other that we cou'd obſerve in this Stream, was ſo uninterrupted, but that there were Several Breaks where a Canoe, or even a Moderate Flat-bottom'd Boat, might Shear clear. Nor have we reaſon to believe there are any other Falls (except the great ones, thirty Miles below Moniſeep-Ford) that reach quite acroſs, ſo as to interrupt the Navigation for Small Craft. And I have been inform'd that, even at thoſe Great Falls, the Blowing up a few Rocks wou'd open a Paſſage at leaſt for canoes, which certainly wou'd be an unſpeakable Convenience to the Inhabitants of all that beautiful Part of the Country. 1729 Oct.

The Indian kill'd a very fat Doe, and came acroſs a Bear, which had been put to Death and was half devour'd by a Panther. The laſt of theſe Brutes reigns abſolute Monarch of the Woods, and in the keenneſs of his hunger will venture to attack a Bear; tho' then 'tis ever by ſurprize, as all Beaſts of the cat kind uſe to come upon their Prey.

Their Play is to take the poor Bears napping, they being very drowſy Animals, and tho' they be exceedingly Strong, yet their Strength is heavy, while the Panthers are too Nimble and cunning to truſt themſelves within their Hugg.

As formidable as this Beaſt is to his Fellow Brutes, he never has the confidence to venture upon a Man, but retires from him with great reſpect, if there be a way open for his Eſcape. However, it muſt be confeſſt, his Voice is a little contemptible for a Monarch of the Forreſt, being not a great deal louder nor more awful than the Mewing of a Houſehold Cat.[1]

In South Carolina they call this Beaſt a Tyger, tho' impro-

[1] Some Authors, who have given an Account of the Southern Continent of America, wou'd make the World believe there are Lyons; but in all likelihood they were miſtaken, imagining theſe Panthers to be Lyons. What makes this probable is, that the Northern and Southern Parts of America being join'd by the Iſthmus of Darien, if there were Lyons in either they would find their way into the other, the Latitudes of each being equally proper for that generous animal.

1729 Oct. perly, and ſo they do in ſome parts of the Spaniſh Weſt Indies. Some of their Authors, a little more properly, complement it with the Name of a Leopard. But none of theſe are the Growth of America, that we know of.

The whole Diſtance the Surveyors advanc'd the Line this day amounted to 6 Miles and 30 Poles, which was no ſmall Journey, conſidering the Grounds we had traverſt were exceedingly rough and uneven, and in many Places intolerably entangled with Buſhes. All the Hills we aſcended were encumber'd with Stones, many of which ſeem'd to contain a Metallick Subſtance, and the Vallies we croſt were interrupted with Miry Branches. From the Top of every Hill we cou'd diſcern diſtinctly, at a great Diſtance to the Northward, three or four Ledges of Mountains, riſing one above another; and on the higheſt of all roſe a Single Mountain, very much reſembling a Woman's Breaſt.

19 About four Miles beyond the River Irvin, we forded Matrimony Creek, call'd ſo by an unfortunate marry'd man, becauſe it was exceedingly noiſy and impetuous. However, tho' the Stream was Clamorous, yet, like thoſe Women who make themſelves plaineſt heard, it was likewiſe perfectly clear and unſully'd.

Still half a Mile further we ſaw a Small Mountain, about five Miles to the North-weſt of us, which we call'd the Wart, becauſe it appear'd no bigger than a Wart, in Compariſon of the great Mountains which hid their haughty Heads in the Clouds.

We were not able to extend the Line farther than 5 Miles and 135 Poles, notwithſtanding we began our March Early in the Morning, and did not encamp till it was almoſt dark.

We made it the later by endeavouring to Quarter in ſome convenient Situation, either for Graſs or Canes. But Night

Surpriſing us, we were oblig'd to Lodge at laſt upon High and uneven Ground, which was ſo overgrown with Shrubs and Saplings, that we cou'd hardly ſee ten yards around us. 1729 Oct.

The moſt melancholy part of the Story was, that our Horſes had Short Commons. The poor Creatures were now grown ſo weak that they Stagger'd when we mounted them. Nor wou'd our own Fare have been at all more plentiful, had we not been ſo provident as to carry a Load of Meat along with us. Indeed, the Woods were too thick to ſhew us any ſort of Game but one Wild Turkey, which help'd to enrich our Soup.

To make us amends, we found abundance of very Sweet Grapes, which, with the help of Bread, might have furniſh'd out a good Italian Repaſt, in the Abſence of more Savoury Food.

The men's Mouths water'd at the Sight of a Prodigious Flight of Wild Pigeons, which flew high over our Heads to the Southward.

The Flocks of theſe Birds of Paſſage are ſo amazingly great, Sometimes, that they darken the Sky; nor is it uncommon for them to light in ſuch Numbers on the Larger Limbs of Mulberry-Trees and Oaks as to break them down.

In their Travels they make vaſt Havock amongſt the Acorns and Berries of all Sorts, that they waſt whole Forreſts in a ſhort time, and leave a Famine behind them for moſt other Creatures; and under Some Trees where they light, it is no Strange thing to find the ground cover'd three Inches thick with their Dung. Theſe Wild Pigeons commonly breed in the uninhabited parts of Canada, and as the Cold approaches aſſemble their Armies and bend their Courſe Southerly, Shifting their Quarters, like many of the Winged kind, according to the Seaſon. But the moſt remarkable thing in their Flight, as we are told, is that they never have been obſerv'd to return to the Northern Countries the ſame way they came from thence, but take quite another Rout, I ſuppoſe for their better Subſiſtence.

1729 Oct. In theſe long Flights they are very lean, and their Fleſh is far from being white or tender, tho' good enough upon a March, when Hunger is the ſauce, and makes it go down better than Truffles and Morels wou'd do.

20 It was now Sunday, which we had like to have ſpent in Faſting as well as Prayer; for our Men, taking no Care for the Morrow, like good Chriſtians, but bad Travellers, had improvidently Devour'd all their Meat for Supper.

They were order'd in the Morning to drive up their Horſes, leſt they ſhou'd ſtray too far from the Camp and be loſt, in caſe they were let alone all day. At their Return they had the very great Comfort to behold a monſtrous fat Bear, which the Indian had kill'd very Seaſonably for their Breakfaſt.

We thought it ſtill neceſſary to make another Reduction of our Bread, from four to three Pounds a Week to every man, computing that we had ſtill enough in that Proportion to laſt us Three weeks longer.

The Atmoſphere was ſo ſmoaky all round us, that the Mountains were again grown inviſible. This happen'd not from the Hazyneſs of the Sky, but from the fireing of the Woods by the Indians, for we were now near the Route the Northern Savages take when they go out to War againſt the Cataubas and other Southern Nations.

On their way the Fires they make in their camps are left burning, which, catching the dry Leaves that ly near, ſoon put the adjacent Woods into a flame.

Some of our men in Search of their Horſes diſcovered one of thoſe Indian camps, where not long before they had been Furring and dreſſing their Skins.

And now I mention the Northern Indians, it may not be improper to take Notice of their implacable Hatred to thoſe of the South. Their Wars are everlaſting, without any Peace, Enmity being the only Inheritance among them that deſcends from Fa-

ther to Son, and either Party will march a thouſand Miles to take their Revenge upon ſuch Hereditary Enemies. 1729 Oct.

Theſe long Expeditions are commonly carry'd on in the following Manner; Some Indian, remarkable for his Proweſs, that has raiſ'd himſelf to the Reputation of a War-Captain, declares his Intention of paying a Viſit to ſome ſouthern Nation; Hereupon as many of the Young Fellows as have either a Strong Thirſt of Blood or Glory, liſt themſelves under his command.

With theſe Volunteers he goes from One Confederate Town to another, liſting all the Rabble he can, til he has gather'd together a competent Number for Miſchief.

Their Arms are a Gun and Tomahawk, and all the Proviſions they carry from Home is a Pouch of Rockahominy. Thus provided and accoutr'd, they march towards their Enemy's Country, not in a Body, or by a certain Path, but Straggling in Small Numbers, for the greater convenience of Hunting and paſſing along undiſcover'd.

So ſoon as they approach the Grounds on which the Enemy is uſed to hunt, they never kindle any Fire themſelves, for fear of being found out by the ſmoak, nor will they Shoot at any kind of Game, tho' they ſhou'd be half Famiſht, leſt they might alarm their Foes, and put them upon their Guard.

Sometimes indeed, while they are ſtill at ſome diſtance, they roaſt either Veniſon or Bear, till it is very dry, and then having Strung it on their Belts, wear it round their Middle, eating very Sparingly of it, becauſe they know not when they ſhall meet with a freſh Supply. But coming nearer, they begin to look all round the Hemiſphere, to watch if any Smoke aſcends, and liſten continually for the Report of Guns, in order to make ſome happy Diſcovery for their own advantage.

It is amazing to ſee their Sagacity in diſcerning the Track of a Human Foot, even amongſt dry leaves, which to our Shorter Sight is quite undiſcoverable.

1729 Oct. If by one or more of thoſe Signs they be able to find out the Camp of any Southern Indians, they Squat down in ſome Thicket, and keep themſelves huſh and Snug till it is dark; Then creeping up Softly, they approach near enough to obſerve all the Motions of the Enemy. And about two a Clock in the Morning, when they conceive them to be in a Profound Sleep, for they never keep Watch and Ward, pour in a Volley upon them, each Singling out his Man. The Moment they have diſcharg'd their Pieces, they ruſh in with their Tomahawks, and make ſure work of all that are diſabled.

Sometimes, when they find the Enemy Aſleep around their little Fire, they firſt Pelt them with little Stones to wake them, and when they get up, fire in upon them, being in that poſture a better Mark than when proſtrate on the Ground.

Thoſe that are kill'd of the Enemy, or diſabled, they Scalp, that is, they cut the Skin all round the Head juſt below the hair, and then clapping their Feet to the poor Mortal's Shoulders, pull the Scalp off clean, and carry it home in Triumph, being as proud of thoſe Trophies, as the Jews uſed to be of the Foreſkins of the Philiſtines.

This way of Scalping was practiſed by the Ancient Scythians, who uſ'd theſe hairy Scalps as Towels at Home, and Trappings for their Horſes when they went abroad.

They alſo made Cups of their Enemies' Skulls, in which they drank Proſperity to their country, and Confuſion to all their Foes.

The Priſoners they happen to take alive in theſe expeditions generally paſs their time very Scurvily. They put them to all the Tortures that ingenious Malice and cruelty can invent. And (what ſhews the baſeneſs of the Indian Temper in Perfection) they never fail to treat thoſe with the greateſt Inhumanity that have diſtinguiſh'd themſelves moſt by their Bravery; and, if he be a War-Captain, they do him the Honour to roaſt him alive, and

distribute a Collop to all that had a Share in Stealing the Victory.[1] 1729 Oct.

They are very cunning in finding out new ways to torment their unhappy Captives, tho', like those of Hell, their usual Method is by Fire. Sometimes they Barbacue them over live-Coals, taking them off every now and then, to prolong their Misery; at other times they will Stick Sharp Pieces of Light-wood all over their Body's, and setting them afire, let them burn down into the Flesh to the very Bone. And when they take a Stout Fellow, that they believe able to endure a great deal, they will tear all the Flesh off his Bones with red hot Pincers.

While these and such like Barbarities are practising, the Victors are so far from being touch'd with Tenderness and Compassion, that they dance and Sing round these wretched Mortals, shewing all the Marks of Pleasure and Jollity. And if such cruelties happen to be executed in their Towns, they employ their Children in tormenting the Prisoners, in order to extinguish in them betimes all Sentiments of Humanity.

In the mean time, while these poor Wretches are under the Anguish of all this inhuman Treatment, they disdain so much as to groan, Sigh, or shew the least Sign of Dismay or concern, so much as in their Looks; on the Contrary, they make it a Point of Honour all the time to Soften their Features, and look as pleas'd as if they were in the Actual Enjoyment of Some Delight; and if they never sang before in their Lives, they will be sure to be Melodious on this sad and Dismal Occasion.

[1] Tho' who can reproach the poor Indians for this, when Homer makes his celebrated Hero, Achilles, drag the Body of Hector at the Tail of his chariot, for having fought gallantly in defence of his Country. Nor was Alexander the Great, with all his Fam'd Generosity, less inhuman to the brave Tyrians, 2000 of whom he order'd to be crucify'd in cold Blood, For no other fault but for having defended their City most courageously against Him, dureing a Siege of Seven Months. And what was still more brutal, he dragg'd alive —— at the Tail of his Chariot, thro' all the Streets, for defending the Town with so much Vigour.

1729 Oct. So prodigious a Degree of Paſſive Valour in the Indians is the more to be wonder'd at, becauſe in all Articles of Danger they are apt to behave like Cowards. And what is ſtill more Surprizeing, the very Women diſcover, on ſuch Occaſions, as great Fortitude and Contempt, both of Pain and Death, as the Gallanteſt of their Men can do.

21 The Apprehenſions we had of loſing the Horſes in theſe Copſe Woods were too well founded, nor were the Precautions we uſ'd Yeſterday of driveing them up Sufficient to prevent their Straying away afterwards, notwithſtanding they were ſecurely hobbled.

We therefore Order'd the men out early this Morning to look diligently for them, but it was late before any cou'd be found. It ſeems they had ſtraggled in queſt of Forrage, and, beſides all that, the Buſhes grew thick enough to conceal them from being Seen at the Smalleſt Diſtance. One of the People was ſo bewilder'd in ſearch of his Horſe, that he loſt Himſelf, being no great Foreſter.

However, becauſe we were willing to ſave time, we left two of our moſt expert Woodſmen behind to beat all the Adjacent Woods in Queſt of Him.

In the mean while the Surveyors proceeded vigouroufly on their Buſineſs, but were ſo perplext with Thickets at their firſt ſetting off, that their Progreſs was much retarded.

They were no ſooner over that Difficulty, but they were oblig'd to encounter another. The reſt of their day's-Work lay over very Sharp Hills, where the dry leaves were ſo Slippery that there was hardly any hold for their Feet. Such Rubbs as theſe prevented them from Meaſuring more than 4 Miles and 270 Poles.

Upon the Sides of theſe Hills the Soil was rich, tho' full of Stones, and the Trees reaſonably large.

The Smoak continued ſtill to Veil the Mountains from our

Sight, which made us long for Rain, or a briſk Gale of Wind, to diſperſe it. Nor was the loſs of this wild Proſpect all our concern, but we were apprehenſive leſt the Woods ſhou'd be burnt in the Courſe of our Line before us, or happen to take fire behind us, either of which wou'd effectually have Starv'd the Horſes, and made us all Foot Soldiers. But we were ſo happy, thank God! as to eſcape this Misfortune in every Part of our Progreſs. 1729 Oct.

We were exceedingly uneaſy about our loſt man, knowing he had taken no Proviſion of any kind, nor was it much Advantage towards his Support, that he had taken his Gun along with him, becauſe he had rarely been guilty of putting any thing to Death.

He had unluckily wander'd from the Camp Several Miles, and after Steering Sundry unſucceſsfull Courſes, in order to return, either to us or to the Line, was at length ſo tired he could go no Farther. In this Diſtreſs he ſat himſelf down under a Tree, to recruit his jaded Spirits, and at the ſame time indulge a few Melancholy Reflections.

Famine was the firſt Phantom that appear'd to him, and was the more frightfull, becauſe he fancy'd himſelf not quite Bear enough to Subſiſt long upon licking his Paws.

In the mean time the two Perſons we had ſent after him hunted diligently great part of the day without coming upon his Track. They fir'd their Pieces towards every Point of the Compaſs, but cou'd perceive no fireing in return. However, advancing a little farther, at laſt they made a lucky Shot, that our Straggler had the good Fortune to hear, and he returning the Salute, they ſoon found each other with no Small Satisfaction. But tho' they lighted of the man, they cou'd by no means light of his Horſe, and therefore he was oblig'd to be a Foot Soldier all the reſt of the Journey.

Our Indian ſhot a Bear ſo prodigiouſly fat, that there was no way to kill Him but by fireing in at his Ear.

1729 Oct. The fore part of the Skull of that Animal being guarded by a double Bone, is hardly penetrable, and when it is very fat, a Bullet aim'd at his Body is apt to loſe its force, before it reaches the Vitals.

This Animal is of the Dog kind, and our Indians, as well as Woodſmen, are as fond of its Fleſh as the Chineſe can be of that of the Common Hound.

22 Early in the Morning we ſent back two men to make further Search for the horſe that was Stray'd away. We were unwilling the Poor man ſhou'd Suſtain ſuch a Damage as wou'd eat out a large Part of his Pay, or that the Publick ſhou'd be at the Expenſe of reemburſing Him for it.

. Theſe foreſters hunted all over the Neighbouring Woods, and took as much pains as if the Horſe had been their own Property, but all their Diligence was to no purpoſe.

The Surveyors, in the mean time, being fearful of leaving theſe men too far behind, advanc'd the Line no farther than One Mile and 230 Poles.

As we rode along we found no leſs than three Bears and a fat Doe, that our Indian, who went out before us, had thrown in our Courſe, and we were very glad to pick them up.

About a Mile from the Camp we croſt Miry Creek, So call'd becauſe Several of the Horſes were mired in its Branches. About 230 Poles beyond that, the Line interſected another River, that ſeem'd to be a Branch of the Irvin, to which we gave the Name of the Mayo, in complement to the other of our Surveyors. It was about 50 Yards wide where we forded it, being juſt below a Ledge of Rocks, which reacht acroſs the River, and made a natural caſquade.

Our Horſes cou'd hardly keep their feet over theſe Slippery Rocks, which gave Some of their Riders no ſmall Palpitation.

This River forks about a Quarter of a Mile below the Ford, and has Some Scattering Canes growing near the Mouth of it.

We pitcht our Tent on the Weſtern Banks of the Mayo, for the Pleaſure of being lull'd to Sleep by the Caſquade. Here our Hunters had leiſure to go out and try their Fortunes, and return'd loaden with Spoil. They brought in no leſs than Six Bears, exceedingly fat, ſo that the frying pan had no reſt all Night. We had now the Opportunity of trying the ſpeed of theſe lumpiſh Animals by a fair Courſe it had with the Nimbleſt of our Surveyors. 1729 Oct.

A Cubb of a year Old will run very faſt, becauſe, being upon his growth, he is never encumber'd with too much fat; but the Old ones are more Sluggiſh and unwieldy, eſpecially when Maſt is Plenty. Then their Nimbleſt Gait is only a heavy Gallop, and their Motion is ſtill Slower down hill, where they are oblig'd to Sidle very awkwardly, to keep their Lights from riſeing up into their Throat.

Theſe Beaſts always endeavour to avoid a man, except when they are wounded, or happen to be engaged in the Protection of their Cubbs.

By the force of theſe Inſtincts and that of Self-Preſervation, they will now and then throw off all Reverence for their Maker's Image. For that Reaſon, exceſs of hunger will provoke them to the ſame Deſperate Attack, for the ſupport of their Being.

A Memorable Inſtance of the laſt Caſe is ſaid to have happen'd not long ago in New England, where a Bear aſſaulted a Man juſt by his own Door, and rearing himſelf upon his Haunches, offer'd to take him lovingly into his Hug. But the Man's Wife obſerving the Danger her Huſband was in, had the courage to run behind the Bear, and thruſt her two Thumbs into his Eyes. This made Bruin quit the Man, and turn ſhort upon the Woman to take his Revenge, but She had the Preſence of mind to ſpring back with more than Female Agility, and ſo both their Lives were preſerv'd.

At the Diſtance of 62 Poles from where we lay, we croſt the 23

1729 Oct. South Branch of what we took for the Irvin, nor was it without Difficulty we got over, tho' it happen'd to be without Damage.

Great part of the way after that was Mountainous, ſo that we were no ſooner got down one Hill, but we were oblig'd to climb up another. Only for the laſt Mile of our Stage, we encounter'd a Locuſt Thicket that was level, but interlac'd terribly with Bryars and Grape Vines.

We forded a large creek, no leſs than five times, the Banks of which were ſo ſteep that we were forc'd to cut them down with a Hough.

We gave it the Name of Crooked creek, becauſe of its frequent Meanders. The Sides of it were planted with Shrub-Canes, extremely inviting to the Horſes, which were now quite jaded with clambering up ſo many Precipices, and tugging thro' ſo many diſmal Thickets, notwithſtanding which we puſht the Line this day Four Miles and 69 Poles. The men were ſo unthrifty this Morning as to bring but a Small Portion of their Abundance along with them. This was the more unlucky, becauſe we cou'd diſcover no Sort of Game the whole livelong Day. Woodſmen are certainly good Chriſtians in one reſpect, at leaſt, that they always leave the Morrow to care for itſelf; tho' for that very reaſon they ought to pray more fervently for their Dayly Bread than moſt of them remember to do.

The Mountains were ſtill conceal'd from our Eyes by a cloud of Smoak. As we went along we were alarmed at the Sight of a great Fire, which ſhewed itſelf to the Northward. This made our ſmall Corps march in cloſer Order than we uſ'd to do, leſt perchance we might be waylaid by Indians. It made us look out Sharp to ſee if we cou'd diſcover any Track or other Token of theſe inſidious Forreſters, but found none. In the mean time we came often upon the Track of Bears, which can't without ſome Skill be diſtinguiſht from that of Human Creatures, made with Naked Feet. And Indeed a Young Woodſman wou'd be

puzzled to find out the Difference, which conſiſts principally in a Bear's Paws being ſomething Smaller than a Man's foot, and in its leaving ſometimes the Mark of its Claws in the Impreſſion made upon the Ground. 1729 Oct.

The Soil where the Locuſt Thicket grew, was exceedingly rich, as it conſtantly is, where that kind of Tree is Naturally and largely produc'd.

But the Deſolation made there lately, either by Fire or Caterpillars, had been ſo general, that we could not ſee a Tree of any Bigneſs ſtanding within our Proſpect. And the Reaſon why a Fire makes ſuch a Havock in theſe lonely Parts is this.

The Woods are not there burnt every year, as they generally are amongſt the Inhabitants. But the dead Leaves and Traſh of many years are heapt up together, which being at length kindled by the Indians that happen to paſs that way, furniſh fewel for a conflagration that carries all before it.

There is a beautiful Range of Hills, as levil as a Terraſs-Walk, that overlooks the Valley through which Crooked Creek conveys its Spiral Stream.

This Terraſs runs pretty near Eaſt and Weſt, about two Miles South of the Line, and is almoſt Parallel with it.

The Horſes had been too much haraſſ'd to permit us to ride at all out of our way, for the pleaſure of any Proſpect, or the gratification of any Curioſity. This confin'd us to the Narrow Sphere of our Buſineſs, and is at the ſame time a juſt Excuſe for not animating our Story with greater Variety.

The Surveyors went out the ſooner this Morning, by reaſon the men loſt very little time in Cooking their Breakfaſt. They had made but a Spare Meal over Night, leaving nothing but the Hide of a Bear for the Morrow. Some of the keeneſt of them got up at Midnight to Cook that nice Morſel after the Indian Manner. 24

1729 Oct. They firſt Singed the Hair clean off, that none of it might Stick in their Throats; then they boil'd the Pelt into Soup, which had a Stratum of Greaſe Swimming upon it full half an Inch Thick. However, they commended this Diſh extremely; tho' I believe the Praiſes they gave it were more owing to their good Stomach than to their good Taſt.

The Line was extended 6 Miles and 300 Poles, and in that Diſtance croſſt Crooked Creek at leaſt eight times more.

We were forct to ſcuffle through a Thicket about two Miles in breadth, planted with Locuſts and hiccory Sapplings, as cloſe as they cou'd ſtand together. Amongſt theſe there was hardly a Tree of Tolerable Growth within View. It was a dead Plane of Several Miles Extent, and very fertile Soil. Beyond that the Woods were open for about three Miles, but Mountainous. All the reſt of our Day's Journey was peſter'd with Buſhes and Grape Vines, in the thickeſt of which we were obliged to take up our Quarters, near one of the Branches of Crooked creek.

This Night it was the Men's good fortune to fare very ſumptuouſly. The Indian had kill'd two large Bears, the fateſt of which he had taken napping. One of the People too Shot a Raccoon, which is alſo of the Dog-kind, and as big as a ſmall Fox, tho' its Legs are Shorter, and when fat has much a higher reliſh than either Mutton or Kid. 'Tis naturally not Carniverous, but very fond of Indian corn and Parſimons.

The fat of this Animal is reckon'd very good to aſſwage Swellings and Inflammations. Some old Maids are at the Trouble of breeding them up tame, for the pleaſure of ſeeing them play over as many Humorous Tricks as a Munkey. It climbs up ſmall Trees, like a Bear, by embraceing the Bodies of them.

Till this Night we had accuſtom'd ourſelves to go to Bed in our Night-Gowns, believing we ſhou'd thereby be better ſecur'd

from the cold: but upon tryal found we lay much warmer by Stripping to our Shirts, and Spreading our Gowns over us. 1729 Oct.

A True Woodſman, if he have no more than a Single Blanket, conſtantly pulls all off, and, lying on one part of it, draws the other over him, believing it much more refreſhing to ly ſo, than in his cloaths; and if he find himſelf not warm enough, Shifts his Lodging to Leeward of the Fire, in which Situation the ſmoak will drive over him, and effectually correct the cold Dews that wou'd otherwiſe deſcend upon his Perſon, perhaps to his great damage.

The Air clearing up this Morning, we were again agreeably ſurprized with a full Proſpect of the Mountains. They diſcover'd themſelves both to the North and South of us, on either ſide, not diſtant above ten Miles, according to our beſt Computation.

We cou'd now ſee thoſe to the North riſe in four diſtinct Ledges, one above another, but thoſe to the South form'd only a Single Ledge, and that broken and interrupted in many Places; or rather they were only ſingle Mountains detacht from each other.

One of the Southern Mountains was ſo vaſtly high, it ſeem'd to hide its head in the Clouds, and the Weſt End of it terminated in a horrible Precipice, that we call'd the Deſpairing Lover's Leap. The Next to it, towards the Eaſt, was lower, except at one End, where it heav'd itſelf up in the form of a vaſt Stack of Chimnys.

The Courſe of the Northern Mountains ſeem'd to tend Weſt-South-Weſt, and thoſe to the Southward very near Weſt. We cou'd deſcry other Mountains ahead of us, exactly in the Courſe of the Line, tho' at a much greater diſtance. In this Point of View, the Ledges on the right and Left both ſeem'd to cloſe, and form a Natural Amphi-Theater.

Thus 'twas our Fortune to be wedg'd in betwixt theſe two Ranges of Mountains, inſomuch that if our Line had run ten

1729 Oct. Miles on either Side, it had butted before this day either upon one or the other, both of them now Stretching away plainly to the Eaſtward of us.

It had rain'd a little in the Night, which diſperſt the ſmoak and open'd this Romantick Scene to us all at once, tho' it was again hid from our Eyes as we mov'd forwards, by the rough Woods we had the Misfortune to be engag'd with. The Buſhes were ſo thick for near four Miles together, that they tore the Deer-Skins to Pieces that guarded the Bread-Bags. Tho', as rough as the Woods were, the Soil was extremely good all the way, being waſht down from the Neighbouring Hills into the Plane Country. Notwithſtanding all theſe Difficulties, the Surveyors drove on the line 4 Miles and 205 Poles.

In the mean time we were ſo unlucky as to meet with no Sort of Game the whole day, ſo that the men were oblig'd to make a frugal diſtribution of what little they left in the Morning.

We encampt upon a ſmall Rill, where the Horſes came off as temperatly as their Maſters. They were by this time grown ſo thin, by hard Travel and Spare Feeding, that henceforth, in pure Compaſſion, we choſe to perform the greater Part of the Journey on foot. And as our Baggage was by this time grown much lighter, we divided it, after the beſt Manner, that every Horſe's Load might be proportion'd to the Strength he had left. Tho', after all the prudent Meaſures we cou'd take, we perceiv'd the Hills began to riſe upon us ſo faſt in our Front, that it wou'd be impoſſible for us to proceed much farther.

We ſaw very few Squirrels in the upper parts, becauſe the Wild Cats devour them unmercifully. Of theſe there are four kinds: The Fox Squirrel, the Gray, the Flying, and the Ground-Squirrel.

Theſe laſt reſemble a Rat in every thing but the Tail, and the black and Ruſſet Streaks that run down the Length of their little Bodies.

We found our way grow ſtill more Mountainous, after extending the Line 300 Poles farther. We came then to a Rivulet that ran with a Swift Current towards the South. This we fancy'd to be another Branch of the Irvin, tho' ſome of theſe men, who had been Indian Traders, judg'd it rather to be the head of Deep River, that diſcharges its Stream into that of Pee Dee; but this ſeem'd a wild Conjecture. 1729 Oct. 26

The Hills beyond that River were exceedingly lofty, and not to be attempted by our Jaded Palfreys, which could now hardly drag their Legs after them upon level Ground. Beſides, the Bread began to grow Scanty, and the Winter Seaſon to advance apace upon us.

We had likewiſe reaſon to apprehend the Conſequences of being intercepted by deep Snows, and the Swelling of the many Waters between us and Home. The firſt of theſe Misfortunes would ſtarve all our Horſes, and the Other ourſelves, by cutting off our Retreat, and obliging us to Winter in thoſe Deſolate Woods. Theſe conſiderations determin'd us to Stop ſhort here, and puſh our Adventures no farther. The laſt Tree we markt was a Red Oak, growing on the Bank of the River; and to make the Place more remarkable, we blaz'd all the Trees around it.

We found the whole Diſtance from Corotuck Inlet to the Rivulet where we left off, to be, in a Strait Line, Two Hundred and Forty-one Miles and Two Hundred and Thirty Poles. And from the Place where the Carolina Commiſſioners deſerted us, 72 Miles and 302 Poles. This laſt part of the Journey was generally very hilly, or elſe grown up with troubleſome Thickets and underwoods, all which our Carolina Friends had the Diſcretion to avoid.

We encampt in a dirty Valley near the Rivulet above-mention'd, for the advantage of the Canes, and ſo ſacrificed our own Convenience for that of our Horſes.

1729 Oct. There was a Small Mountain half a Mile to the Northward of us, which we had the Curioſity to Climb up in the Afternoon, in Order to enlarge our Proſpect. From thence we were able to diſcover where the two Ledges of Mountains cloſ'd, as near as we cou'd gueſs, about 30 Miles to the Weſt of us, and lamented that our preſent circumſtances wou'd not permit us to advance the Line to that Place, which the Hand of Nature had made ſo very remarkable.

Not far from our Quarters one of the men pickt up a pair of Elk's Horns, not very large, and diſcover'd the Track of the Elk that had Shed them. It was rare to find any Tokens of thoſe Animals ſo far to the South, becauſe they keep commonly to the Northward of 37 degrees, as the Buffaloes, for the moſt part, confine themſelves to the Southward of that Latitude.

The Elk is full as big as a Horſe, and of the Deer kind. The Stags only have Horns, and thoſe exceedingly large and Spreading. Their Colour is Something lighter than that of the Red Deer, and their Fleſh tougher. Their ſwifteſt Speed is a large trot, and in that Motion they turn their Horns back upon their Necks, and Cock their Noſes aloft in the Air. Nature has taught them this Attitude to ſave their Antlers from being entangled in the Thickets, which they always retire to. They are very ſhy, and have the Senſe of Smelling ſo exquiſite that they wind a man at a great diſtance. For this reaſon they are Seldom Seen but when the Air is moiſt, in which Caſe their ſmell is not ſo Nice.

They commonly herd together, and the Indians ſay, if one of the Drove happen by ſome Wound to be diſabled from making his Eſcape, the reſt will forſake their fears to defend their Friend, which they will do with great obſtinacy, till they are kill'd upon the Spot. Tho', otherwiſe, they are ſo alarm'd at the Sight of a man, that to avoid him they will Sometimes throw themſelves down very high Precipices into the River.

A misadventure happen'd here, which gave us no Small perplexity. One of the Commissioners was so unlucky as to bruise his Foot against a Stump, which brought on a formal Fit of the Gout. 1729 Oct.

It must be own'd there cou'd not be a more unseasonable time, nor a more improper Situation, for any one to be attackt by that cruel Distemper. The Joint was so inflam'd that he cou'd neither draw Shoe nor Boot upon it; and to ride without either wou'd have expos'd him to so many rude knocks and Bruises, in those rough Woods, as to be intolerable even to a Stoick.

It was happy, indeed, that we were to rest here the next day, being Sunday, that there might be leisure for trying some Speedy Remedy. Accordingly he was persuaded to bathe his Foot in Cold Water, in Order to repel the Humour and asswage the Inflammation. This made it less painful, and gave us hopes, too, of reducing the Swelling in a Short time.

Our men had the fortune to kill a Brace of Bears, a fat Buck, and a Wild Turkey, all which paid them with Interest for Yesterday's Abstinence. This constant and Seasonable Supply of all our daily Wants made us reflect thankfully on the Bounty of Providence.

And that we might not be unmindful of being all along fed by Heaven in this great and Solitary Wilderness, we agreed to Wear in our Hats the Maosti, which is, in Indian, the Beard of a Wild Turkey-Cock, and on our Breasts the Figure of that Fowl with its Wings extended, and holding in its Claws a scrowl, with this Motto, "VICE COTURNICUM," meaning that we had been Supported by them in the Wilderness in the room of Quails.

This being Sunday we were not wanting in our Thanks to 27
Heaven for the Constant Support and Protection we had been favour'd with. Nor did our Chaplain fail to put us in mind of Our Duty by a Sermon proper for the Occasion.

1729 Oct. We order'd a Strict Inquiry to be made into the Quantity of Bread we had left, and found no more than wou'd Subſiſt us a Fortnight at Short Allowance. We made a fair Diſtribution of our whole Stock, and at the Same time recommended to the Men to manage this, their laſt Stake, to the beſt advantage, not knowing how long they would be oblig'd to live upon it.

We likewiſe directed them to keep a Watchfull eye upon their Horſes, that none of them might be miſſing the next Morning, to hinder our Return.

There fell ſome Rain before Noon, which made our Camp more a Bogg than it was before. This moiſt Situation began to infect ſome of the men with Fevers, and ſome with Fluxes, which however we ſoon remov'd with Peruvian Bark and Ipocoacanah.

In the Afternoon we marcht up again to the top of the Hill to entertain our Eyes a Second time with the View of the Mountains, but a perverſe Fog aroſe that hid them from our Sight.

In the Evening we deliberated which way it might be moſt proper to return. We had at firſt intended to croſs over at the foot of the Mountains to the head of James River, that we might be able to deſcribe that Natural Boundary ſo far. But, on Second Thoughts, we found many good Reaſons againſt that laudable Deſign, Such as the Weakneſs of our Horſes, the Scantineſs of our Bread, and the near approach of Winter. We had Cauſe to believe the way might be full of Hills, and the farther we went towards the North, the more danger there wou'd be of Snow. Such conſiderations as theſe determin'd us at laſt to make the beſt of our way back upon the Line, which was the Straiteſt, and Conſequently the ſhorteſt way to the Inhabitants. We knew the worſt of that Courſe, and were ſure of a beaten Path all the way, while we were totally ignorant what Difficulties and Dangers the other Courſe might be attended with. So

Prudence got the better for once of Curioſity, and the Itch for new Diſcoveries gave Place to Self-preſervation. 1729 Oct.

Our Inclination was the Stronger to croſs over according to the Courſe of the Mountains, that we might find out whether James River and Appamattock River head there, or run quite thro' them. 'Tis Certain that Potomec paſſes in a large Stream thro' the Main Ledge, and then divides itſelf into two conſiderable Rivers. That which Stretches away to the Northward is call'd Cohungaroota,[1] and that which flows to the South-weſt, hath the Name of Sharantow.

The Courſe of this laſt Stream is near parallel to the Blue Ridge of Mountains, at the diſtance only of about three or four Miles. Tho' how far it may continue that Courſe has not yet been ſufficiently diſcover'd, but ſome Woodſmen pretend to ſay it runs as far as the ſource of Roanoak; Nay, they are ſo very particular as to tell us that Roanoak, Sharantow, and another Wide Branch of Miſſaſſippi, all head in one and the Same Mountain.

What dependence there may be upon this Conjectural Geography, I wont pretend to ſay, tho' 'tis certain that Sharantow keeps cloſe to the Mountains, as far as we are acquainted with its Tendency. We are likewiſe aſſur'd that the South Branch of James River, within leſs than 20 Miles Eaſt of the Main Ledge, makes an Elbow, and runs due South-weſt, which is parallel with the Mountains on this Side. But how far it Stretches that way, before it returns, is not yet certainly known, no more than where it takes its Riſe.

In the mean time it is Strange that our Woodſmen have not had Curioſity enough to inform themſelves more exactly of theſe

[1] Which by a Late Survey has been found to extend above 200 Miles before it reaches its Source, in a Mountain, from whence Allegany, one of the Branches of Miſſaſſippi, takes its Riſe, and runs South-Weſt, as this River dos South-Eaſt.

1729 Oct. particulars, and it is Stranger Still that the Government has never thought it worth the Expenſe of making an accurate Survey of the Mountains, that we might be Maſters of that Natural Fortification before the French, who in ſome Places have Settlements not very diſtant from it.

It therefore concerns his Majeſty's Service very nearly, and the Safety of His Subjects in this part of the World, to take Poſſeſſion of ſo important a Barrier in time, leſt our good Friends, the French, and the Indians, thro' their Means, prove a perpetual Annoyance to theſe Colonies.

Another Reaſon to invite us to Secure this great Ledge of Mountains is, the Probability that very Valuable Mines may be diſcover'd there. Nor wou'd it be at all extravagant to hope for Silver Mines, among the reſt, becauſe Part of theſe Mountains ly exactly in the ſame Parallel, as well as upon the Same Continent with New Mexico, and the Mines of St. Barb.

28 We had given Orders for the Horſes to be brought up early, but the likelyhood of more Rain prevented our being over-haſty in decamping. Nor were we out in our conjectures, for about ten a'clock it began to fall very plentifully.

Our Commiſſioner's Pain began now to abate, as the Swelling encreaſ'd. He made an excellent Figure for a Mountaineer, with one boot of Leather and the other of Flannel. Thus accowtur'd, he intended to mount, if the Rain had not happen'd opportunely to prevent him.

Tho', in Truth, it was hardly poſſible for Him to ride with ſo Slender a Defenſe, without expoſeing his Foot to be bruiſ'd and tormented by the Saplings, that ſtood thick on either ſide of the Path. It was therefore a moſt Seaſonable Rain for Him, as it gave more time for his Diſtemper to abate.

Tho' it may be very difficult to find a certain Cure for the Gout, yet it is not improbable but ſome things may eaſe the Pain, and Shorten the Fits of it. And thoſe Medicines are moſt

likely to do this, that Supple the Parts, and clear the Paſſage Through the Narrow Veſſels, that are the Seat of this cruel Diſeaſe. Nothing will do this more Suddenly than Rattle-ſnake's Oyl, which will even penetrate the Pores of Glaſs when warm'd in the ſun. 1729 Oct.

It was unfortunate, therefore, that we had not taken out the Fat of thoſe Snakes we had kill'd ſome time before, for the Benefit of ſo uſeful an Experiment, as well as for the Relief of our Fellow-Traveller.

But lately the Seneca Rattle-Snake Root has been diſcover'd in this Country, which being infuſ'd in Wine, and drank Morning and Evening, has in Several Inſtances had a very happy Effect upon the Gout, and enabled Cripples to throw away their Crutches and walk ſeveral Miles, and, what is Stranger Still, it takes away the Pain in half an hour.

Nor was the Gout the only Diſeaſe amongſt us that was hard to cure. We had a man in our Company who had too Voracious a Stomach for a Woodſman. He ate as much as any other two, but all he Swallow'd ſtuck by him till it was carry'd off by Strong Purge. Without this Aſſiſtance, often repeated, his Belly and Bowels wou'd ſwell to ſo enormous a Bulk that he could hardly breathe, eſpecially when he lay down, juſt as if he had had an Aſthma; tho', notwithſtanding this oddneſs of conſtitution, he was a very Strong, lively Fellow, and uſ'd abundance of Violent Exerciſe, by which 'twas wonderfull the Periſtaltick Motion was not more Vigorouſly promoted.

We gave this poor Man Several Purges, which only eaſ'd Him for the preſent, and the next day he wou'd grow as burly as ever. At laſt we gave Him a Moderate Doſe of ippocoacanah, in Broth made very Salt, which turn'd all its Operation downwards. This had ſo happy an Effect that, from that day forward to the End of our Journey, all his Complaint ceaſ'd, and the paſſages continued unobſtructed.

1729 Oct. The Rain continued moſt of the Day and Some part of the Night, which incommoded us much in our Dirty Camp, and made the men think of Nothing but Eating, even at the time when nobody cou'd Stir out to make proviſion for it.

29 Tho' we were flattered in the morning with the uſual Tokens of a fair Day, yet they all blew over, and it rain'd hard before we cou'd make ready for our Departure.

This was ſtill in favour of our Podagrous Friend, whoſe Lameneſs was now grown better, and the Inflamnıation fallen. Nor did it ſeem to need above one day more to reduce it to its Natural Proportion, and make it fit for the Boot; And effectually The Rain procur'd this Benefit for him, and gave him particular Reaſon to believe his Stars propitious.

Notwithſtanding the falling Weather, our Hunters ſally'd out in the afternoon, and drove the Woods in a Ring, which was thus performed. From the circumference of a large Circle they all march't inwards and drove the Game towards the center. By this means they ſhot a Brace of fat Bears, which came very ſeaſonably, becauſe we had made clean Work in the Morning and were in Danger of dining with St. Anthony, or his Grace Duke Humphry.

But in this Expedition the unhappy man who had loſt himſelf once before, Straggled again ſo far in Purſuit of a Deer, that he was hurry'd a ſecond time quite out of his knowledge. And Night coming on before he cou'd recover the Camp, he was obliged to lie down, without any of the Comforts of Fire, Food or covering; Nor would his Fears ſuffer him to Sleep very Sound, becauſe, to his great diſturbance, the Wolves howl'd all that Night, and the Panthers ſcream'd moſt frightfully.

In the Evening a briſk North-Weſter ſwept all the Clouds from the Sky, and expoſ'd the mountains as well as the Stars to our Proſpect.

That which was the moſt lofty to the Southward, and which

we call'd the Lover's Leap, ſome of our Indian Traders fondly fancy'd was the Kiawan mountain, which they had formerly ſeen from the country of the Cherokees. 1729 Oct.

They were the more poſitive by reaſon of the prodigious Precipice that remarkably diſtinguiſhed the Weſt End of it.

We ſeem'd however not to be far enough South for that, tho' 'tis not improbable but a few miles farther the Courſe of our Line might carry us to the moſt Northerly Towns of the Cherokees.

What makes this the more credible, is the North Weſt Courſe, that our Traders take from the Catawbas for ſome hundred miles together, when they carry Goods that round-about way to the Cherokees.

It was a great Pity that the want of Bread, and the Weakneſs of our Horſes, hinder'd us from making the Diſcovery. Tho' the great Service of ſuch an Excurſion might have been to the Country wou'd certainly have made the attempt not only pardonable, but much to be commended.

Our Traders are now at the vaſt Charge and Fatigue of travelling above five hundred miles for the Benefit of that traffique which hardly quits coſt. Wou'd it not then be worth the Aſſembly's while to be at ſome charge to find a Shorter cut to carry on ſo profitable a Trade, with more advantage, and leſs hazard and Trouble, than they do at preſent? For I am perſuaded it will not then be half the Diſtance that our Traders make it now, nor half ſo far as Georgia lies from the Northern Clans of that Nation.

Such a Diſcovery would certainly prove an unſpeakable Advantage to this Colony, by facilitating a Trade with ſo conſiderable a nation of Indians, which have 62 Towns, and more than 4000 Fighting Men. Our Traders at that rate would be able to underſell thoſe ſent from the other Colonies ſo much, that the Indians muſt have reaſon to deal with them preferable to all others.

1729 Oct. Of late the new colony of Georgia has made an act obliging us to go 400 miles to take out a Licenſe to traffick with theſe Cherokees, tho' many of their Towns ly out of their Bounds, and we had carry'd on this Trade 80 years before that Colony was thought of.

30 In the Morning early the man who had gone aſtray the day before found his way to the Camp, by the Sound of the Bells that were upon the Horſes' Necks.

At nine a'clock we began our March back towards the riſing Sun; for tho' we had finiſht the Line, yet we had not yet near finiſht our Fatigue. We had after all 200 good miles at leaſt to our ſeveral Habitations, and the Horſes were brought ſo low, that we were oblig'd to travel on foot great part of the way, and that in our Boots, too, to ſave our Legs from being torn to pieces by the Buſhes and Briars. Had we not done this, we muſt have left all our Horſes behind, which cou'd now hardly drag their Legs after them, and with all the favour we cou'd ſhow the poor Animals, we were forc'd to ſet Seven of them free, not far from the foot of the Mountains.

Four men were deſpatcht early to clear the Road, that our Lame Commiſſioner's leg might be in leſs danger of being bruiſ'd, and that the Baggage Horſes might travel with leſs difficulty and more expedition.

As we paſt along, by favour of a Serene Sky, we had ſtill, from every Eminence, a perfect view of the Mountains, as well to the North as to the South. We could not forbear now and then facing about to ſurvey them, as if unwilling to part with a Proſpect, which at the ſame time, like ſome Rake's, was very wild and very Agreeable.

We encourag'd the Horſes to exert the little Strength they had, and being light, they made a ſhift to jog on about Eleven Miles. We Encampt on Crooked Creek, near a Thicket of Canes. In the front of our Camp roſe a very beautiful Hill,

that bounded our View at about a Mile's Diſtance, and all the Intermediate ſpace was cover'd with green canes. Tho', to our Sorrow, Fire-wood was Scarce, which was now the harder upon us, becauſe a north-weſter blew very cold from the Mountains. 1729 Oct.

The Indian kill'd a ſtately, fat Buck, & we pickt his Bones as clean as a ſcore of Turky-Buzzards cou'd have done.

By the advantage of a clear night, we made tryal once more of the Variation, and found it much the ſame as formerly.

This being his Majeſty's Birth-Day, we drank all the Loyal Healths in excellent Water, not for the ſake of the drink, (like many of our fellow ſubjects,) but purely for the Sake of the Toaſt. And becauſe all Public Mirth ſhou'd be a little noiſy, we fir'd ſeveral volleys of Canes, inſtead of Guns, which gave a loud report.

We threw them into the Fire, where the Air encloſed betwixt the Joints of the Canes, being expanded by the violent Heat, burſt its narrow Bounds with a conſiderable exploſion!

In the Evening one of the men knockt down an Opoſſum, which is a harmleſs little Beaſt, that will ſeldom go out of your way, and if you take hold of it, it will only grin, and hardly ever bite. The Fleſh was well taſted and Tender, approaching neareſt to Pig, which it alſo reſembles in Bigneſs. The colour of its Fur was a Gooſe Gray, with a Swine's Snout, and a Tail like a Rat, but at leaſt a foot long. By twiſting this Tail about the arm of a Tree, it will hang with all its weight, and ſwing to any thing it wants to take hold of.

It has five Claws on the fore Feet of equal length, but the hinder feet have only Four claws, and a ſort of Thumb ſtanding off at a proper Diſtance.

Their Feet being thus form'd, qualify them for climbing up Trees to catch little Birds, which they are very fond of.

But the greateſt Particularity of this creature, and which diſtinguiſhes it from moſt others that we are acquainted with, is

1729 Oct. the FALSE BELLY of the FEMALE, into which her Young retreat in time of Danger. She can draw the Slit, which is the Inlet into this Pouch, ſo cloſe, that you muſt look narrowly to find it, eſpecially if ſhe happen to be a Virgin.

Within the Falſe Belly may be ſeen ſeven or eight Teats, on which the young Ones grow from their firſt Formation till they are big enough to fall off, like ripe Fruit from a Tree. This is ſo odd a method of Generation, that I ſhould not have believed it without the Teſtimony of mine own Eyes. Beſides a knowing and credible Perſon has aſſur'd me he has more than once obſerv'd the Embryo Poſſums growing to the Teat before they were compleatly Shaped, and afterwards watcht their daily growth till they were big enough for Birth. And all this he could the more eaſily pry into, becauſe the Damm was ſo perfectly gentle and harmleſs, that he could handle her juſt as he pleaſ'd.

I cou'd hardly perſuade myſelf to publiſh a thing ſo contrary to the Courſe that Nature takes in the Production of other Animals, unleſs it were a Matter Commonly believ'd in all Countries where that Creature is produc'd, and has been often obſerved by Perſons of undoubted credit and underſtanding.

They ſay that the Leather-winged Bats produce their Young in the ſame uncommon Manner. And that young Sharks at Sea, and Young Vipers aſhoar, run down the Throats of their Damms when they are cloſely purſued.

The frequent croſſing of Crooked Creek, and mounting the Steep Banks of it, gave the finiſhing ſtroke to the foundering of our Horſes: and no leſs than than two of them made a full ſtop here, and would not advance a foot farther, either by fair means or foul.

We had a Dreamer of Dreams amongſt us, who warned me in the Morning to take care of myſelf, or I ſhou'd infallibly fall into the Creek; I thank'd him kindly, and uſed what Caution I

cou'd, but was not able it ſeems to avoid my Deſtiny, for my Horſe made a falſe ſtep and laid me down at my full Length in the water. 1729 Oct.

This was enough to bring dreaming into credit, and I think it much for the Honour of our expedition, that it was grac'd not only with PRIEST but alſo with a PROPHET.

We were ſo perplext with this Serpentine Creek, as well as in Paſſing the Branches of the Irvin, (which were ſwell'd ſince we ſaw them before,) that we could reach but 5 miles this whole day. In the Evening We pitched our Tent near Miry creek, (tho' an uncomfortable place to lodge in) purely for the advantage of the Canes.

Our Hunters killed a large Doe and two Bears, which made all other misfortunes eaſy. Certainly no Tartar ever lov'd Horſe-fleſh, or Hottentot Guts and Garbage, better than Woodſmen do Bear. The truth of it is, it may be proper food perhaps for ſuch as Work or Ride it off, but, with our Chaplain's Leave, who lov'd it much, I think it not a very proper dyet for ſaints, becauſe 'tis apt to make them a little too rampant.

And now, for the good of mankind, and for the better Peopling an Infant colony, which has no want but that of Inhabitants, I will venture to publiſh a Secret of Importance, which our Indian diſcloſ'd to me. I aſkt him the reaſon why few or none of his Countrywomen were barren? To which curious Queſtion he anſwered, with a Broad grin upon his Face, they had an infallible SECRET for that. Upon my being importunate to know what the ſecret might be, he informed me that, if any Indian woman did not prove with child at a decent time after Marriage, the Huſband, to ſave his Reputation with the women, forthwith entered into a Bear-dyet for Six Weeks, which in that time makes him ſo vigorous that he grows exceedingly impertinent to his poor wife and 'tis great odds but he makes her a mother in Nine Months.

1729 Oct. And thus much I am able to ſay, beſides, for the Reputation of the Bear Dyet, that all the Marryed men of our Company were joyful Fathers within forty weeks after they got Home, and moſt of the Single men had children ſworn to them within the ſame time, our chaplain always excepted, who, with much ado, made a ſhift to caſt out that importunate kind of Devil, by Dint of Faſting and Prayer.

Nov. 1 By the negligence of one of the Men in not hobbling his Horſe, he ſtraggled ſo far that he could not be found. This ſtopt us all the Morning long; Yet, becauſe our Time ſhould not be entirely loſt, we endeavoured to obſerve the Latitude at twelve a clock. Though our Obſervation was not perfect, by reaſon the Wind blew a little too freſh, however, by Such a One as we cou'd make, we found ourſelves in 36° 20′ only.

Notwithſtanding our being thus delay'd, and the uneveneſs of the Ground, over which we were oblig'd to walk, (for moſt of us ſerv'd now in the Infantry,) we travell'd no leſs than 6 miles, Tho' as merciful as we were to our poor Beaſts, another of 'em tired by the way, & was left behind for the Wolves & Panthers to feaſt upon.

As we marcht along, we had the fortune to kill a Brace of Bucks, as many Bears, and one wild Turkey. But this was carrying our Sport to wantonneſs, becauſe we butchered more than we were able to tranſport. We ordered the Deer to be quarter'd and divided among the Horſes for the lighter Carriage, and recommended the Bears to our dayly attendants, the Turkey-Buzzards.

We always choſe to carry Veniſon along with us rather than Bear, not only becauſe it was leſs cumberſome, but likewiſe becauſe the People cou'd eat it without Bread, which was now almoſt ſpent. Whereas the other, being richer food, lay too heavy upon the ſtomach, unleſs it were lightened by ſomething farinaceous. This is what I thought proper to remarque, for the

ſervice of all thoſe whoſe Buſineſs or Diverſion ſhall oblige them to live any time in the Woods. 1729 Nov.

And becauſe I am perſuaded that very uſefull Matters may be found out by Searching this great Wilderneſs, eſpecially the upper parts of it about the Mountains, I conceive it will help to engage able men in that good work, if I recommend a wholeſome kind of Food, of very ſmall Weight and very great Nouriſhment, that will ſecure them from Starving, in caſe they ſhou'd be ſo unlucky as to meet with no Game. The Chief diſcouragement at preſent from penetrating far into the Woods is the trouble of carrying a Load of Proviſions. I muſt own Famine is a frightful Monſter, and for that reaſon to be guarded againſt as well as we can. But the common precautions againſt it, are ſo burthenſome, that People can't tarry long out, and go far enough from home, to make any effectual Diſcovery.

The Portable Proviſions I would furniſh our Foreſters withal are Glue-Broth and rockahomini: one contains the Eſſence of Bread, the other of Meat.

The beſt way of making Glue-Broth is after the following method: Take a Leg of Beef, Veal, Veniſon, or any other Young Meat, becauſe Old Meat will not ſo eaſily Jelly. Pare off all the fat, in which there is no Nutriment, and of the Lean make a very ſtrong Broth, after the uſual Manner, by boiling the meat to Rags till all the Goodneſs be out. After Skimming off what fat remains, pour the Broth into a wide Stew-Pan, well tinn'd, & let it ſimmer over a gentle, even Fire, till it come to a thick Jelly. Then take it off and ſet it over Boiling Water, which is an Evener Heat, and not ſo apt to burn the Broth to the Veſſel. Over that let it evaporate, ſtirring it very often till it be reduc'd, when cold, into a Solid Subſtance like Glue. Then cut it into ſmall Pieces, laying them Single in the Cold, that they may dry the Sooner. When the Pieces are perfectly

1729 Nov. dry, put them into a Canniſter, and they will be good, if kept Dry, a whole Eaſt India Voyage.

This Glue is ſo Strong, that two or three Drams, diſſolv'd in boiling Water with a little Salt, will make half a pint of good Broth, & if you ſhou'd be faint with faſting or Fatigue, let a ſmall piece of this Glue melt in your Mouth, and you will find yourſelf ſurpriſingly refreſhed.

One Pound of this cookery wou'd keep a man in good heart above a Month, and is not only Nouriſhing, but likewiſe very wholeſome. Particularly it is good againſt Fluxes, which Woodſmen are very liable to, by lying too near the moiſt ground, and guzzling too much cold Water. But as it will be only uſ'd now and then, in times of Scarcity, when Game is wanting, two Pounds of it will be enough for a Journey of Six Months.

But this Broth will be ſtill more heartening, if you thicken every meſs with half a Spoonful of Rockahominy, which is nothing but Indian Corn parched without burning, and reduced to Powder. The Fire drives out all the Watery Parts of the Corn, leaving the Strength of it behind, and this being very dry, becomes much lighter for carriage and leſs liable to be Spoilt by the Moiſt Air.

Thus half a Dozen Pounds of this Sprightful Bread will ſuſtain a Man for as many Months, provided he huſband it well, and always Spare it when he meets with Veniſon, which, as I ſaid before, may be very Safely eaten without any Bread at all.

By what I have ſaid, a Man needs not encumber himſelf with more than 8 or 10 Pounds of Proviſions, tho' he continue half a year in the Woods.

Theſe and his Gun will ſupport him very well during that time, without the leaſt danger of keeping one Single Faſt. And tho' ſome of his days may be what the French call *Jours maigres*, yet there will happen no more of thoſe than will be neceſſary for his health, and to carry off the Exceſſes of the Days of Plenty,

when our Travellers will be apt to indulge their Lawleſs Appetites too much. 1729 Nov. 2

The Heavens frowned this Morning, and threaten'd abundance of Rain, but our Zeal for returning made us defy the Weather, and decamp a little before Noon. Yet we had not advanct two Miles, before a Soaking Shower made us glad to pitch our Tent as faſt as we could. We choſe for that purpoſe a riſing Ground, half a mile to the Eaſt of MATRIMONY CREEK. This was the firſt and only time we were caught in the Rain, during the whole Expedition. It uſ'd before to be ſo civil as to fall in the night, after we were ſafe in our Quarters, and had trencht ourſelves in; or elſe it came upon us on Sundays, when it was no Interruption to our Progreſs, nor any Inconvenience to our Perſons.

We had, however, been ſo lucky in this Particular before, that we had abundant Reaſon to take our preſent ſoaking patiently, and the Misfortune was the leſs, becauſe we had taken the Precaution to keep all our Baggage and Bedding perfectly dry.

This Rain was enliven'd with very loud Thunder, which was echo'd back by the Hills in the Neighbourhood in a frightful Manner. There is ſomething in the Woods that makes the Sound of this Meteor more awfull, and the Violence of the Lightening more Viſible. The Trees are frequently Shiver'd quite down to the Root, and ſometimes perfectly twiſted. But of all the Effects of Lightening that ever I heard of, the moſt amazing happen'd in this country, in the Year 1736.[1]

In the Summer of that year a Surgeon of a Ship, whoſe Name was Davis, came aſhoar at York to viſit a Patient. He was no ſooner got into the Houſe, but it began to rain with many terrible Claps of Thunder. When it was almoſt dark there came a dreadful Flaſh of Lightning, which Struck the Surgeon dead as

[1] See Note, *ante*, Page 1.

1729 Nov. he was walking about the Room, but hurt no other Perſon, tho' ſeveral were near him. At the ſame time it made a large Hole in the Trunk of a Pine Tree, which grew about Ten Feet from the Window. But what was moſt ſurpriſing in this Diſaſter was, that on the Breaſt of the unfortunate man that was kill'd was the Figure of a Pine Tree, as exactly delineated as any Limner in the World could draw it, nay, the Reſemblance went ſo far as to repreſent the coulour of the Pine, as well as the Figure. The Lightning muſt probably have paſſed thro' the the Tree firſt before it ſtruck the Man, and by that means have printed the Icon of it on his breaſt.

But whatever may have been the cauſe, the Effect was certain, and can be atteſted by a Cloud of Witneſſes who had the curioſity to go and ſee this Wonderful Phenomenon.

The worſt of it was, we were forced to Encamp in a barren place, where there was hardly a blade of Graſs to be ſeen, Even the wild Roſemary failed us here, which gave us but too juſt apprehenſions that we ſhould not only be oblig'd to trudge all the way home on foot, but alſo to lug our Baggage at our Backs into the Bargain.

Thus we learnt by our own Experience, that Horſes are very improper animals to uſe in a long Ramble into the Woods, and the better they have been uſed to be fed, they are ſtill the worſe. Such will fall away a great deal faſter, and fail much ſooner, than thoſe which are wont to be at their own keeping. Beſides, Horſes that have been accuſtom'd to a Plane and Champaign Country will founder preſently, when they come to clamber up Hills, and batter their Hoofs againſt continal Rocks.

We need Welſh Runts, and Highland Galloways to climb our Mountains withal; they are uſ'd to Precipices, and will bite as cloſe as Banſtead Down Sheep. But I ſhould much rather recommend Mules, if we had them, for theſe long and painful Expeditions; tho' till they can be bred, certainly Aſſes are the

fitteſt Beaſts of Burthen for the Mountains. They are ſure-footed, patient under the heavieſt Fatigue, and will ſubſiſt upon Moſs, or Browſing on Shrubs all the Winter. One of them will carry the Neceſſary Luggage of four Men, without any Difficulty, and upon a Pinch will take a Quarter of Bear or Veniſon upon their Backs into the Bargain. 1729 Nov.

Thus, when the Men are light and diſengaged from every thing but their Guns, they may go the whole Journey on foot with pleaſure. And tho' my Dear Countrymen have ſo great a Paſſion for riding, that they will often walk two miles to catch a Horſe, in Order to ride One, yet, if they'll pleaſe to take my Word for't, when they go into the Woods upon Diſcovery, I would adviſe them by all Means to march a-foot, for they will then be deliver'd from the great Care and Concern for their Horſes, which takes up too large a portion of their time.

Over Night we are now at the trouble of hobbling them out, and often of leading them a mile or two to a convenient place for Forrage, and then in the morning we are ſome Hours in finding them again, becauſe they are apt to ſtray a great way from the place where they were turn'd out. Now and then, too, they are loſt for a whole day together, and are frequently ſo weak and jaded, that the Company muſt ly ſtill Several days, near ſome Meadow, or High-land Pond, to recruit them. All theſe delays retard their Progreſs intolerably; whereas, if they had only a few Aſſes, they wou'd abide cloſe to the Camp, and find Sufficient food every where, and in all Seaſons of the Year. Men wou'd then be able to travel Safely over Hills and Dales, nor wou'd the Steepeſt Mountains obſtruct their Progreſs.

They might alſo ſearch more narrowly for Mines and other Productions of Nature, without being confin'd to level grounds, in Compliment to the jades they ride on. And one may foretell, without the Spirit of Divination, that ſo long as Woodſmen continue to range on Horſe-back, we ſhall be Strangers to our

1729 Nov. own Country, and a few or no valuable Diſcoveries will ever be made.

The FRENCH COURIERS *de Bois*, who have run from one one End of the Continent to the other, have performed it all on foot, or elſe in all probability muſt have continued as ignorant as we are.

Our Country has now been inhabited more than 130 years by the Engliſh, and ſtill we hardly know any thing of the Appallachian Mountains, that are no where above 250 miles from the ſea. Whereas the French, who are later comers, have rang'd from Quebec Southward as far as the Mouth of Miſſiſſippi, in the bay of Mexico, and to the Weſt almoſt as far as California, which is either way above 2000 miles.

3 A North-weſt Wind having clear'd the Sky, we were now tempted to travel on a Sunday, for the firſt time, for want of more plentiful Forage, though ſome of the more Scrupulous amongſt us we unwilling to do Evil, that good might come of it, and make our Cattle work a Good part of the Day in order to fill their Bellies at Night. However, the Chaplain put on his caſuiſtical Face, and offer'd to take the ſin upon Himſelf. We therefore conſented to move a Sabbath Day's Journey of 3 or 4 Miles, it appearing to be a Matter of ſome neceſſity.

On the way our unmerciful Indian kill'd no leſs than two Brace of Deer and a large Bear. We only prim'd the Deer, being unwilling to be encumbered with their whole Carcaſſes. The reſt we conſign'd to the Wolves, which in Return ſeranaded us great part of the Night. They are very clamorous in their Banquets, which we know is the way ſome other Brutes have, in the extravagance of their Jollity and Sprightlineſs, of expreſſing their thanks to Providence.

We came to our Old camp, in Sight of the River Irvin, whoſe Stream was Swell'd now near four feet with the Rain that fell the Day before. This made it impracticable for us to ford

it, nor could we gueſs when the water wou'd fall enough to let us go over. 1729 Nov.

This put our Mathematical Profeſſor, who ſhou'd have ſet a better Example, into the Vapours, fearing he ſhou'd be oblig'd to take up his Winter Quarters in that doleful Wilderneſs. But the reſt were not affected with his want of Faith, but preſerv'd a Firmneſs of Mind Superior to ſuch little Adverſe Accidents. They truſted that the ſame good Providence which had moſt remarkably proſper'd them hitherto, would continue his goodneſs and conduct them ſafe to the End of their Journey.

However, we found plainly that travelling on the Sunday, contrary to our conſtant Rule, had not thriven with us in the leaſt. We were not gainers of any diſtance by it, becauſe the river made us pay two days for Violating one.

Nevertheleſs, by making this Reflection, I would not be thought ſo rigid an obſerver of the Sabbath as to allow of no Work at all to be done, or Journeys to be taken upon it. I ſhould not care to ly ſtill and be knockt on the head, as the Jews were heretofore by Antiochus, becauſe I believ'd it unlawful to ſtand upon my Defenſe on this good day. Nor would I care, like a certain New England Magiſtrate, to order a Man to the Whipping Poſt, for daring to ride for a Midwife on the Lord's Day.

On the contrary, I am for doing all acts of Neceſſity, Charity, and Self-Preſervation, upon a Sunday as well as other days of the Week. But, as I think our preſent March cou'd not Strictly be juſtify'd by any of theſe Rules, it was but juſt we ſhould ſuffer a little for it.

I never could learn that the Indians ſet apart any day of the Week or the Year for the Service of God. They pray, as Philoſophers eat, only when they have a ſtomach, without having any ſet time for it. Indeed theſe Idle People have very little occaſion for a ſabbath to refreſh themſelves after hard Labour,

1729 Nov. becauſe very few of them ever Labour at all. Like the wild Iriſh, they would rather want than Work, and are all men of Pleaſure, to whom every day is a day of reſt.

Indeed, in their Hunting, they will take a little Pains; but this being only a Diverſion, their ſpirits are rather raiſ'd than depreſſ'd by it, and therefore need at moſt but a Night's Sleep to recruit them.

4 By ſome Stakes we had driven into the River yeſterday, we perceiv'd the Water began to fall, but fell ſo Slowly that we found we muſt have patience a day or two longer. And becauſe we were unwilling to ly altogether Idle, we ſent back ſome of the men to bring up the two Horſes that tir'd the Saturday before. They were found near the place where we had left them, but ſeemed too ſenſible of their Liberty to come to us. They were found Standing indeed, but as Motionleſs as the Equeſtrian ſtatue at CHARING-CROSS.

We had great reaſon to apprehend more Rain by the clouds that drove over our Heads. The boldeſt amongſt us were not without ſome Pangs of uneaſineſs at ſo very Sullen a Proſpect. However, God be praiſ'd! it all blew over in a few Hours.

If much Rain had fallen, we reſolv'd to make a Raft and bind it together with Grape Vines, to Ferry ourſelves and Baggage over the River. Tho', in that Caſe, we expected the Swiftneſs of the Stream wou'd have carry'd down our Raft a long way before we cou'd have tugg'd it to the oppoſite ſhoar.

One of the Young Fellows we had ſent to bring up the tired Horſes entertained us in the Evening with a remarkable adventure he had met with that day.

He had ſtraggled, it ſeems, from his Company in a miſt, and made a cub of a year old betake itſelf to a Tree. While he was new-priming his piece, with intent to fetch it down, the Old Gentlewoman appeared, and perceiving her Heir apparent in Diſtreſs, advanc'd open-mouth'd to his relief.

The man was ſo intent upon his Game, that ſhe had approacht very near him before he perceived her. But finding his Danger, he faced about upon the Enemy, which immediately rear'd upon her poſteriors, & put herſelf in Battle Array. 1729 Nov.

The Man, admiring at the Bear's aſſurance, endeavour'd to fire upon Her, but by the Dampneſs of the Priming, his Gun did not go off. He cockt it a ſecond time, and had the ſame miſfortune. After miſſing Fire twice, he had the folly to punch the Beaſt with the muzzle of his Piece; but mother Bruin, being upon her Guard, ſeized the Weapon with her Paws, and by main ſtrength wrenched it out of the Fellow's Hands.

The Man being thus fairly diſarm'd, thought himſelf no longer a Match for the Enemy, and therefore retreated as faſt as his Legs could carry him.

The brute naturally grew bolder upon the flight of her Adverſary, and purſued him with all her heavy ſpeed. For ſome time it was doubtful whether fear made one run faſter, or Fury the other. But after an even courſe of about 50 yards, the Man had the Miſhap to Stumble over a Stump, and fell down at his full Length. He now wou'd have ſold his Life a Penny-worth; but the Bear, apprehending there might be ſome Trick in the Fall, inſtantly halted, and lookt with much attention on her Proſtrate Foe.

In the mean while, the Man had with great preſence of Mind reſolved to make the Bear believe he was dead, by lying Breathleſs on the Ground, in Hopes that the Beaſt would be too generous to kill him over again. To carry on the Farce, he acted the Corpſe for ſome time without dareing to raiſe his head, to ſee how near the Monſter was to him. But in about two Minutes, to his unſpeakable Comfort, he was raiſ'd from the Dead by the Barking of a Dog, belonging to one of his companions, who came Seaſonably to his Reſcue, and drove the Bear

1729 Nov. 5 from purſuing the Man to take care of her Cub, which ſhe fear'd might now fall into a ſecond Diſtreſs.

We Judg'd the Waters were aſſuag'd this morning to make the River fordable. Therefore about Ten we try'd the Experiment, and every Body got over Safe, except one man, whoſe Horſe Slipt from a Rock as he forded over, and threw him into the River. But being able to ſwim, he was not Carry'd down the Stream very far before he recover'd the North Shore.

At the Diſtance of about 6 miles we paſſt CASCADE CREEK, and 3 Miles farther we came upon the Banks of the Dan, which we croſt with much Difficulty, by reaſon the Water was riſen much higher than when we forded it before.

Here the ſame unlucky Perſon happen'd to be duckt a Second time, and was a Second time Sav'd by Swimming. My own Horſe too plunged in ſuch a Manner that his Head was more than once under Water, but with much ado recover'd his Feet, tho' he made ſo low an obeiſance, that the water ran fairly over my Saddle.

We continued our march as far as LOWLAND CREEK, where we took up our Lodging, for the benefit of the Canes and Winter Graſs that grew upon the rich Grounds thereabouts. On our way thither we had the Misfortune to drop another Horſe, though he carry'd nothing the whole day but his Saddle. We ſhowed the ſame favour to moſt of our Horſes, for fear, if we did not do it, we ſhould in a little time be turned into Beaſts of Burthen ourſelves.

Cuſtom had now made travelling on foot ſo familiar, that we were able to walk ten Miles with Pleaſure. This we cou'd do in our Boots, notwithſtanding our way lay over rough Woods and uneven Grounds.

Our learning to walk in heavy Boots was the ſame advantage to us that learning to Dance High Dances in Wooden Shoes is

to the French, it made us moſt exceedingly Nimble without them. 1729 Nov.

The Indians, who have no way of travelling but on the Hoof, make nothing of going 25 miles a day, and carrying their little Neceſſaries at their backs, and Sometimes a Stout Pack of Skins into the Bargain. And very often they laugh at the Engliſh, who can't Stir to Next Neighbour without a Horſe, and ſay that 2 Legs are too much for ſuch lazy people, who cannot viſit their next neighbour without ſix.

For their Parts, they were utter Strangers to all our Beaſts of Burthen or Carriage, before the Slothful Europeans came amongſt them. They had on no part of the American Continent, or in any of the Iſlands, either Horſes or Aſſes, Camels, Dromedaries or Elephants, to eaſe the Legs of the Original Inhabitants, or to lighten their Labour.

Indeed, in South America, and particularly in Chili, they have a uſeful animal call'd "paco." This creature reſembles a Sheep pretty much; only in the Length of the Neck, and figure of the Head, it is more like a Camel. It is very near as high as the aſs, and the Indians there make uſe of it for carrying moderate Burthens.

The Fleece that grows upon it is very Valuable for the fineneſs, length and Gloſſineſs of the Wool. It has one remarkable Singularity, that the Hoofs of its fore-feet have three Clefts, and thoſe behind no more than one. The Fleſh of this Animal is ſomething drier than our Mutton, but altogether as well taſted.

When it is Angry, it has no way of reſenting its wrongs, but by ſpitting in the Face of thoſe that provoke it: and if the Spawl happen to light on the bare Skin of any Perſon, it firſt creates an Itching, and afterwards a Scab, if no Remedy be applied. The way to manage theſe pacos, and make them tractable, is, to bore a hole in their ears, through which they put a Rope, and then guide them juſt as they pleaſe.

1729 Nov. In Chili, they wear a beautiful kind of Stuff, with thread made of this Creature's Wool, which has a Gloſs Superior to any Camlet, and is ſold very dear in that country.

6 The Difficulty of finding the Horſes among the tall Canes made it late before we decampt. We traverſed very hilly Grounds, but to make amends it was pretty clear of Underwood.

We avoided croſſing the Dan twice by taking a Compaſs round the bent of it. There was no paſſing by the angle of the River without halting a moment to entertain our Eyes again with that Charming Proſpect. When that pleaſure was over we proceeded to Sable Creek, and encamped a little to the Eaſt of it.

The River thereabouts had a charming effect, its Banks being adorn'd with green canes, ſixteen feet high, which make a Spring all the year, as well as plenty of Forage all the Winter.

One of the Men wounded an Old Buck, that was gray with years, and ſeem'd by the Reverend Marks he bore upon him, to confirm the current Opinion of that animal's Longevity. The Smart of his Wounds made him not only turn upon the Dogs, but likewiſe purſue them to ſome Diſtance with great Fury.

However he got away at laſt, though by the blood that iſſued from his Wound he could not run far before he fell, and without doubt made a comfortable repaſt for the wolves. However the Indian had better Fortune, and ſupply'd us with a fat Doe, and a young Bear two years old. At that Age they are in their Prime, and, if they be fat withal, they are a Morſel for a Cardinal.

All the Land we Travell'd over this day, and the day before, that is to ſay from the river Irvin to Sable Creek, is exceedingly rich, both on the Virginia Side of the Line, and that of Carolina. Beſides whole Foreſts of Canes, that adorn the Banks of the River and Creeks thereabouts, the fertility of the Soil throws out ſuch a Quantity of Winter Graſs, that Horſes and Cattle might keep themſelves in Heart all the cold Seaſon without the

help of any Fodder. Nor have the low Grounds only this advantage, but likewiſe the Higher Land, and particularly that which we call the Highland Pond, which is two miles broad, and of a length unknown. 1729 Nov.

I queſtion not but there are 30,000 Acres at leaſt, lying Altogether, as fertile as the Lands were ſaid to be about Babylon, which yielded, if Herodotus tells us right, an Increaſe of no leſs than 2 or 300 for one. But this hath the Advantage of being a higher, and conſequently a much healthier, Situation than that. So that a Colony of 1000 families might, with the help of Moderate Induſtry, paſs their time very happily there.

Beſides grazing and Tillage, which would abundantly compenſate their Labour, they might plant Vineyards upon the Hills, in which Situation the richeſt Wines are always produc'd.

They might alſo propagate white Mulberry Trees, which thrive exceedingly in this climate, in order to the feeding of ſilkworms, and making of Raw Silk.

They might too produce Hemp, Flax and Cotton, in what quantity they pleaſ'd, not only for their own uſe, but likewiſe for Sale. Then they might raiſe very plentiful Orchards, of both Peaches and Apples, which contribute as much as any Fruit to the Luxury of Life. There is no Soil or Climate will yield better Rice than this, which is a Grain of prodigious Increaſe, and of very wholeſome Nouriſhment. In ſhort every thing will grow plentifully here to ſupply either the Wants or Wantonneſs of Man.

Nor can I ſo much as wiſh that the more tender Vegetables might grow here, ſuch as Orange, Lemon, and Olive Trees, becauſe then we ſhou'd loſe the much greater benefit of the briſk North-Weſt Winds, which purge the Air, and ſweep away all the Malignant Fevers, which hover over countries that are always warm.

The Soil wou'd alſo want the advantages of Froſt, and Snow,

1729 Nov. which by their Nitrous Particles contribute not a little to its Fertility. Beſides the Inhabitants wou'd be depriv'd of the Variety and Sweet Viciſſitude of the Seaſon, which is much more delightful than one dull and Conſtant Succeſſion of Warm Weather, diverſify'd only by Rain and Sun Shine.

There is alſo another convenience, that happens to this country by cold weather—it deſtroys a great Number of Snakes, and other Venomous Reptiles, and troubleſome Inſects, or at leaſt lays them to Sleep for Several Months, which otherwiſe would annoy us the whole year round, & multiply beyond all Enduring.

Though Oranges and Lemons are deſirable Fruits, and Uſefull enough in many Caſes, yet, when the Want of them is Supply'd by others more uſeful, we have no cauſe to complain.

There is no climate that produces every thing, ſince the Deluge Wrencht the Poles of the World out of their Place, nor is it fit it ſhou'd be ſo, becauſe it is the Mutual Supply one country receives from another, which creates a mutual Traffic and Intercourſe amongſt men. And in Truth, were it not for the correſpondence, in order to make up each other's Wants, the Wars betwixt Bordering Nations, like thoſe of the Indians and other barbarous People, wou'd be perpetual and irreconcileable.

As to Olive Trees, I know by Experience they will never ſtand the Sharpneſs of our Winters, but their Place may be Supply'd by the Plant call'd Seſſamun, which yields an infinite quantity of large Seed, from whence a Sweet Oyl is preſt, that is very wholeſome and in uſe amongſt the People of Leſſer Aſia. Likewiſe it is uſ'd in Egypt, preferably to oyl olive, being not ſo apt to make thoſe that eat it Conſtantly break out into Scabs, as they do in many parts of Italy. This would grow very kindly here, and has already been planted with good Succeſs in North Carolina, by way of Experiment.

7 After croſſing the Dan, we made a march of 8 miles, over

Hills and Dales as far as the next Ford of that River. And now we were by Practice become ſuch very able Footmen, that we eaſily outwalkt our Horſes, and cou'd have marcht much farther, had it not been in pity to their Weakneſs. Beſides here was plenty of Canes, which was reaſon enough to make us Shorten our Journey. Our Gunners did great Execution as they went along, killing no leſs than two Brace of Deer, and as many Wild Turkeys. 1729 Nov.

Though Practice will ſoon make a man of tolerable Vigour an able Footman, yet, as a Help to bear Fatigue I uſ'd to chew a Root of Ginſeng as I Walk't along. This kept up my Spirits, and made me trip away as nimbly in my half Jack-Boots as younger men cou'd in their Shoes. This Plant is in high Eſteem in China, where it ſells for its Weight in Silver. Indeed it does not grow there, but in the Mountains of Tartary, to which Place the emperor of China Sends 10,000 Men every Year on purpoſe to gather it. But it grows ſo ſcattering there, that even ſo many hands can bring home no great Quantity. Indeed it is a Vegetable of ſo many vertues, that Providence has planted it very thin in every Country that has the happineſs to produce it. Nor indeed is Mankind worthy of ſo great a Bleſſing, ſince Health and long Life are commonly Abuſ'd to ill Purpoſes. This noble Plant grows likewiſe at the Cape of Good Hope, where it is Call'd kanna, and is in wonderful Eſteem among the Hottentots. It grows alſo on the northern continent of America, near the Mountains, but as Sparingly as Truth & Public Spirit. It anſwers exactly both to the Figure and vertues of that which grows in Tartary, ſo that there can be no doubt of its being the Same.

Its vertues are, that it gives an uncommon Warmth and Vigour to the Blood, and friſks the Spirits, beyond any other Cordial. It chears the Heart even of a Man that has a bad Wife, and makes him look down with great Compoſure on the

1729 Nov. croſſes of the World. It promotes inſenſible Perſpiration, diſſolves all Phlegmatick and Viſcous Humours, that are apt to obſtruct the Narrow channels of the Nerves. It helps the Memory, and would quicken even Helvetian dulneſs. 'Tis friendly to the Lungs, much more than Scolding itſelf. It comforts the Stomach, and Strengthens the Bowels, preventing all Colicks and Fluxes. In one Word, it will make a Man live a great while, and very well while he does live. And what is more, it will even make Old Age amiable, by rendering it lively, chearful, and good-humour'd. However 'tis of little uſe in the Feats of Love, as a great prince once found, who hearing of its invigorating Quality, ſent as far as China for ſome of it, though his ladys could not boaſt of any Advantage thereby.

We gave the Indian the Skins of all the Deer that he Shot himſelf, and the Men the Skins of what they Kill'd. And every Evening after the Fires were made, they ſtretcht them very tight upon Sticks, and dry'd them. This, by a Nocturnal Fire, appear'd at firſt a very odd Spectacle, every thing being dark and gloomy round about. After they are Dry'd in this manner they may be folded up without Damage, till they come to be dreſſ'd according to Art.

The Indians dreſs them with Deer's Brains, and ſo do the Engliſh here by their example. For Expedition's Sake they often Stretch their Skins over Smoak in order to dry them, which makes them ſmell ſo diſagreeably that a Rat muſt have a good Stomach to gnaw them in that condition; nay, 'tis ſaid, while that Perfume continues in a Pair of Leather Breeches, the Perſon that wears them will be in no Danger of that Villainous little inſect the French call Morpion. And now I am upon the ſubject of Inſects, it may not be improper to mention ſome few Remedies againſt thoſe that are moſt Vexatious in this Climate. There are two Sorts without Doors, that are great Nuiſances, the Tikes, and the Horſe Flies. The Tikes are either Deer-

tikes, or thoſe that annoy the Cattle. The firſt kind are long, and take a very Strong Gripe, being moſt in remote Woods, above the Inhabitants. 1729 Nov.

The other are round, and more gently inſinuate themſelves into the Fleſh, being in all places where Cattle are frequent. Both theſe Sorts are apt to be troubleſome during the Warm Seaſon, but have ſuch an Averſion to Penny Royal, that they will attaque no Part that is rubb'd with the Juice of that fragrant Vegetable. And a Strong Decoction of this is likewiſe the moſt effectual Remedy againſt Seed-tikes, which bury themſelves in your Legs, when they are ſo ſmall you can hardly diſcern them without a MICROSCOPE.

The Horſe Flies are not only a great Grievance to Horſes, but likewiſe to thoſe that ride them. Theſe little Vixons confine themſelves chiefly to the Woods, and are moſt in moiſt Places. Tho' this Inſect be no bigger than an Ordinary Fly, it bites very Smartly, darting its little Proboſcis into the Skin the inſtant it lights upon it. Theſe are offenſive only in the hot months, and in the Day time, when they are a great Nuiſance to Travellers; inſomuch that it is no Wonder they were formerly employed for one of the Plagues of Egypt. But Dittany, which is to be had in the Woods all the while thoſe Inſects remain in Vigor, is a Sure Defenſe againſt them. For this purpoſe, if you ſtick a Bunch of it on the Head-Stall of your Bridle, they will be ſure to keep a reſpectful Diſtance.

Thus, in what part of the Woods ſoever any thing miſchievous or troubleſome is found, kind Providence is ſure to provide a Remedy. And 'tis probably one great Reaſon why God was pleaſ'd to create theſe, and many other Vexatious Animals, that Men ſho'd exerciſe their Wits and Induſtry, to guard themſelves againſt them.

Bears' Oyl is uſed by the Indians as a General Defence, againſt every Species of Vermin. Among the reſt, they ſay it

1729 Nov. keeps both Bugs and Muſquetas from aſſaulting their Perſons, which wou'd otherwiſe devour Such uncleanly People. Yet Bears' Greaſe has no ſtrong Smell, as that Plant had which the Egyptians formerly uſ'd againſt muſquetas, reſembling our palma Chriſti, the Juice of which ſmelled ſo diſagreeably, that the Remedy was worſe than the Diſeaſe.

Againſt muſquetas, in Egypt, the Richer Sort uſ'd to build lofty Towers, with Bed-chambers in the Tops of them, that they might reſt undiſturbed. 'Tis certain that theſe Inſects are no High Fliers, becauſe their Wings are weak and their Bodies ſo light, that if they mount never ſo little, the wind blows them quite away from their Courſe, and they become an eaſy prey to the Martins, Eaſt India Bats, and other Birds that fly about in continual Queſt of them.

8 As we had twice more to croſs the Dan over two fords, that lay no more than 7 miles from each other, we judg'd the Diſtance wou'd not be much greater to go round the Bent of it. Accordingly we ſent the Indian and two white Men that way, who came up with us in the Evening, after fetching a compaſs of about 12 Miles.

They told us that, about a mile from our laſt Camp, they paſſed a creek fortify'd with Steep Cliffs, which therefore gain'd the name of Cliff Creek. Near 3 miles beyond that they forded a Second Creek, on the Margin of which grew abundance of Tall canes and this was call'd Hix's creek, from one of the Diſcoverers. Between theſe two creeks lies a level of exceeding rich Land, full of large Trees, and cover'd with black Mould, as fruitful, if we believe them, as that which is yearly overflow'd by the Nile.

We who marched the neareſt way upon the Line found the Ground riſing and falling between the two Fords of the Dan, which almoſt broke our own Wind, and the Hearts of our Jaded Palfreys. When we had paſſed the laſt Ford, it was a Senſible

Joy to find ourſelves Safe over all the Waters that might cut off our Retreat. And we had the greater Reaſon to be Thankfull, becauſe ſo late in the Year it was very unuſual to find the rivers ſo fordable. 1729 Nov.

We catcht a large Tarapin in the River, which is one kind of Turtle. The fleſh of it is wholeſome, and good for Conſumptive People. It lays a great Number of Eggs, not larger but rounder than thoſe of Pigeons. Theſe are Soft, but withal ſo tough that 'tis difficult to break them, yet are very Sweet and invigorating, ſo that ſome Wives recommend them earneſtly to their Huſbands.

One of the Men, by an Overſtrain, had unhappily got a Running of the Reins, for which I gave him every Morning a Little Sweet Gumm diſſolv'd in Water, with good ſucceſs. This gumm diſtils from a large Tree, call'd the Sweet-Gum Tree, very Common in Virginia, and is as healing in its Virtue as Balm of Gilead, or the Balſams of Tolu and of Peru. It is likewiſe a moſt Agreeable parfume, very little inferior to Ambergris.

And now I have mention'd Ambergris, I hope it will not be thought an unprofitable digreſſion, to give a faithful Account how it is produced, in Order to reconcile the various Opinions concerning it. It is now certainly found to be the Dung of the Sper Maceti Whale, which is at firſt very black and unſavoury. But after having been waſht for ſome Months in the Sea, and blanch'd in the Sun, it comes at length to be of a Gray colour, and from a moſt offenſive Smell, contracts the fineſt fragrancy in the World.

Beſides the Fragrancy of this Animal Subſtance, 'tis a very rich and innocent Cordial, which raiſes the ſpirits without Stupifying them afterwards, like Opium, or intoxicating them like Wine. The Animal Spirits are amazingly refreſhed by this Cordial, without the Danger of any ill conſequence, and if Huſ-

1729 Nov. bands were now and then to diſſolve a little of it in their Broth, their Conſorts might be the better for it, as well as themſelves. In the Bahama iſlands (where a great Quantity is found, by reaſon the Sperma Ceti Whales reſort thither continually,) it is uſ'd as an Antidote againſt the Venomous Fiſh which abound thereabouts, wherewith the People are apt to Poiſon themſelves.

We are not only oblig'd to that Whale for this rich parfume, but alſo for the Sper Maceti itſelf, which is the Fat of that Fiſh's Head boil'd and purg'd from all its impuritys. What remains is of a balſamick and deterſive Quality, very friendly to the Lungs, and uſefull in many other Caſes.

The Indian had kill'd a fat Doe in the compaſs he took round the Elbow of the River, but was content to Prime it only, by reaſon it was too far off to lug the whole Carcaſs upon his Back. This, and a Brace of Wild Turkeys which our Men had Shot, made up all our Bill of Fare this Evening, but could only afford a Philoſophical Meal to ſo many craving Stomachs.

The Horſes were now ſo lean that any thing would gall thoſe that carry'd the leaſt Burthen; no wonder then if Several of them had ſore Backs, eſpecially now the Pads of the Saddles and Packs were preſſ'd flat with long and conſtant Uſe. This would have been another Misfortune, had we not been provided with an eaſy Remedy for it.

One of the Commiſſioners, believing that Such Accidents might happen in a far Journey, had furniſht himſelf with Plaſters of Strong Glue ſpread pretty thick. We laid on theſe, after making them running hot, which, Sticking faſt, never fell off till the Sore was perfectly heal'd. In the mean time it defended the part ſo well, that the Saddle might bear upon it without Danger of further Injury.

9 We reckon'd our Selves now pretty well out of the Latitude of Bears, to the great Grief of moſt of the company. There

was Still Maſt enough left in the Woods to keep the Bears from drawing ſo near to the Inhabitants. They like not the neighbourhood of Mercileſs Man, till Famine compels them to it. They are all Black in this part of the World, and ſo is their Dung, but it will make Linnen white, being tolerably good Soap, without any Preparation but only drying. 1729 Nov.

Theſe Bears are of a Moderate Size, whereas within the Polar Circles they are white, and much larger. Thoſe of the Southern Parts of Muſcovy are of a Ruſſet Colour, but among the SAMOEIDS, as well as in GREENLAND and NOVA ZEMBLA, they are as white as the ſnow they converſe with, and by ſome Accounts are as large as a Moderate Ox.

The Exceſſive Cold of that Climate ſets their Appetites ſo Sharp, that they will Attack a Man without Ceremony, and even climb up a Ship's Side to come at him. They range about and are very Miſchievous all the time the Sun is above the Horizon, which is ſomething more than Five Months; but after the Sun is Set for the reſt of the Year, they retire into Holes, or bury themſelves under the Snow, and Sleep away the Dark Seaſon without any Suſtenance at all. 'Tis pitty our Beggars and Pickpockets Cou'd not do the Same.

Our Journey this day was above 12 Miles, and more than half the way terribly hamper'd with Buſhes. We tir'd another Horſe, which we were oblig'd to leave two miles ſhort of where we Encampt, and indeed Several others were upon the Careen almoſt every Step. Now we wanted one of thoſe celebrated Muſicians of Antiquity, who, they tell us, among many other Wonders of their Art, cou'd play an air which, by its Animateing Briſkneſs wou'd make a Jaded Horſe caper and curvet much better than any Whip, Spur, or even than Swearing. Tho' I fear our poor Beaſts were ſo haraſt that it wou'd have been beyond the Skill of Orpheus himſelf ſo much as to make them prick up their ears.

1729 Nov. For Proof of the Marvellous Power of Muſic among the Ancients, ſome Hiſtorians ſay, that one of thoſe Skilful Maſters took upon him to make the great Alexander ſtart up from his Seat, and handle his Javelin, whether he would or not, by the force of a ſprightly Tune, which he knew how to play to Him. The King ordered the man to bring his Inſtrument, and then fixing himſelf firmly in his chair, and determining not to Stir, he bade him to Strike up as ſoon as he pleaſ'd. The Muſician obey'd, and preſently rouſ'd the Hero's Spirits with ſuch War-like Notes, that he was conſtrain'd, in Spite of all his Reſolution, to ſpring up and fly to his Javelin with great martial Fury.

We can the eaſier credit theſe Prophane Stories by what we find recorded in the Oracles of Truth, where we are told the Wonders David performed by Sweetly touching his Harp. He made nothing of driving the Evil Spirit out of Saul, tho' a certain rabbi aſſures us he could not do ſo much by his Wife, MICHAL, when ſhe happen'd to be in her Ayrs.

The greateſt Inſtance we have of the Power of Modern Muſic is that which cures thoſe who in Italy are bitten by the little Spider called the Tarantula. The whole method of which is perform'd in the following manner.

In Apulia it is a common Misfortune for People to be bitten by the Tarantula, and moſt about Taranto and Gallipoli. This is a gray ſpider, not very large, with a narrow Streak of white along the Back. It is no wonder there are many of theſe Villainous Inſects, becauſe, by a Ridiculous Superſtition 'tis accounted great Inhumanity to kill them. They believe, it ſeems, that if the Spider come to a Violent Death, all thoſe who had been bitten by it will certainly have a Return of their Frenzy every Year as long as they live. But if it dye a Natural Death, the Patient will have a chance to recover in two or three Years.

The Bite of the tarantula gives no more pain than the Bite of a muſqueta, and makes little or no inflammation on the Part,

eſpecially when the Diſaſter happens in April or May; but, its Venom encreaſing with the Heat of the Seaſon, has more fatal Conſequences in July and Auguſt. The Perſons who are ſo unhappy as to be bitten in thoſe Warm Months, fall down on the Place in a few Minutes, and lye ſenſeleſs for a conſiderable time, and when they come to themſelves feel horrible Pains, are very Sick at their Stomachs, and in a Short time break out into foul Sores; but thoſe who are bitten in the Milder Months have much gentler Symptoms. They are longer before the Diſtemper Shows itſelf, and then they have a ſmall Diſorder in their Senſes, are a little ſick, and perhaps have ſome Moderate Breakings-out. 1729 Nov.

However, in both caſes, the Patient keeps upon the Bed, not caring to ſtir, till he is rouſ'd by a Tune, proper for his particular caſe. Therefore, as ſoon as the Symptoms diſcover themſelves, a Tarantula Doctor is ſent for, who, after viewing carefully the condition of the Perſon, firſt tries one Tune and then another, until he is ſo fortunate as to hit the Phrenetic turn of the Patient. No ſooner does this happen but he begins to Wag a finger, then a Hand, and afterwards a Foot, till at laſt he ſprings up and dances Round the Room, with a Surpriſing Agility, rolling his Eyes and looking wild the whole time. This dancing-Fit laſts commonly about 25 minutes, by which time he will be all in a Lather. Then he ſits down, falls a laughing, and returns to his Senſes. So Plentiful a Perſpiration diſcharges ſo much of the Venom as will keep off the Return of the Diſtemper for a whole Year. Then it will Viſit Him again, and muſt be remov'd in the Same Merry Manner. But three dancing Bouts will do the Buſineſs, unleſs, peradventure, the Spider, according to the Vulgar Notion, has been put to a Violent Death.

The Tunes play'd to expell this Whimſicall Diſorder, are of the Jigg-kind, and exceed not 15 in number. The Apulians are frequently dancing off the Effects of this Poiſon, and no Remedy is more commonly apply'd to any other Diſtemper elſe-

1729 Nov. where, than thoſe Sprightly Tunes are to the Bite of the Tarantula in that part of Italy.

It is remarkable that theſe Spiders have a greater Spight to the Natives of the Place than they have to Strangers, and Women are oftener bitten than Men. Tho' there may be a Reaſon for the laſt, becauſe Women are more confin'd to the Houſe, where theſe Spyders keep, and their coats make them liable to Attacks unſeen, whereas the Men can more eaſily diſcover, and bruſh them off their Legs. Nevertheleſs, both Sexes are cur'd the Same way, and thereby Show the Wonderful Effects of Muſic.

Conſidering how far we had walkt, and conſequently how hungry we were, we found but Short commons when we came to our Quarters. One Brace of Turkeys was all the Game we cou'd meet with, which almoſt needed a Miracle to enable them to Suffice ſo many Voracious Appetites. However, they juſt made a Shift to keep Famine, and conſequently Mutiny, out of the Camp. At Night we lodg'd upon the Banks of Buffalo Creek, where none of us cou'd complain of loſs of Reſt, for having eaten too heavy and Luxurious a Supper.

10 In a Dearth of Proviſions our Chaplain pronounc'd it lawful to make bold with the Sabbath, and ſend a Party out a-Hunting. They fired the Dry Leaves in a Ring of five Miles' circumference, which, burning inwards, drove all the Game to the Centre, where they were eaſily killed.

It is really a pitiful Sight to ſee the extreme Diſtreſs the poor deer are in, when they find themſelves Surrounded with this Circle of Fire; they weep and Groan like a Human Creature, yet can't move the compaſſion of thoſe hard-hearted People, who are about to murder them. This unmerciful Sport is called Fire Hunting, and is much practic'd by the Indians and Frontier Inhabitants, who ſometimes, in the Eagerneſs of their Diverſion, are Puniſh't for their cruelty, and are hurt by one another when they Shoot acroſs at the Deer which are in the Middle.

What the Indians do now by a Circle of Fire, the ancient Perſians performed formerly by a circle of Men: and the ſame is practiſ'd at this day in Germany upon extraordinary Occaſions, when any of the Princes of the Empire have a Mind to make a General Hunt, as they call it. At ſuch times they order a vaſt Number of People to Surround a whole Territory. Then Marching inwards in cloſe Order, they at laſt force all the Wild Beaſts into a Narrow Compaſs, that the Prince and his Company may have the Diverſion of Slaughtering as many as they pleaſe with their own hands. 1729 Nov.

Our Hunters maſſacred two Brace of Deer after this unfair way, of which they brought us one Brace whole, and only the Primings of the reſt. So many were abſent on this Occaſion, that we who remained excuſ'd the Chaplain from the Trouble of ſpending his Spirits by Preaching to ſo thin a Congregation. One of the men, who had been an old Indian Trader, brought me a Stem of Silk Graſs, which was about as big as my little Finger. But, being ſo late in the Year that the Leaf was fallen off, I am not able to deſcribe the Plant.

The Indians uſe it in all their little Manufactures, twiſting a Thread of it that is prodigiouſly Strong. Of this they make their Baſkets and the Aprons which their Women wear about their Middles, for Decency's Sake. Theſe are long enough to wrap quite round them and reach down to their Knees, with a Fringe on the under part by way of Ornament.

They put on this modeſt covering with ſo much art, that the moſt impertinent curioſity can't in the Negligenteſt of their Motions or Poſtures make the leaſt diſcovery. As this ſpecies of Silk Graſs is much Stronger than Hemp, I make no doubt but Sail Cloth and Cordage might be made of it with conſiderable Improvement.

We had all been ſo refreſht by our day of reſt, that we de- 11
camp'd earlier than Ordinary, and paſſed the Several Fords of

1729 Nov. Hico River. The Woods were thick great Part of this Day's Journey, ſo that we were forced to ſcuffle hard to advance 7 miles, being equal in fatigue to double that diſtance of Clear and Open Grounds.

We took up our Quarters upon Sugar-tree Creek, in the ſame camp we had lain in when we came up, and happen'd to be entertained at Supper with a Rarity we had never had the fortune to meet with before, during the whole Expedition.

A little wide of this creek, one of the men had the Luck to meet with a Young Buffalo of two Years Old. It was a Bull, which, notwithſtanding he was no older, was as big as an ordinary Ox. His Legs are very thick and very Short, and his Hoofs exceeding broad. His Back roſe into a kind of Bunch a little above the Shoulders, which I believe contributes not a little to that creature's enormous Strength. His Body is vaſtly deep from the ſhoulders to the Briſket, ſometimes 6 feet in thoſe that that are full grown. The portly figure of this Animal is diſgrac'd by a Shabby little Tail, not above 12 Inches long. This he cocks up on end whenever he's in a Paſſion, and, inſtead of lowing or bellowing, grunts with no better grace than a Hog.

The Hair growing on his Head and Neck is long and Shagged, and ſo Soft that it will Spin into Thread not unlike Mohair, which might be wove into a Sort of Camlet. Some People have Stockings knit of it, that would have ſerv'd an Iſraelite during his forty Years' march thro' the Wilderneſs.

Its horns are ſhort and Strong, of which the Indians make large Spoons, which they ſay will Split and fall to Pieces whenever Poiſon is put into them. Its Colour is a dirty Brown, and its hide ſo thick that it is Scarce penetrable. However, it makes very Spongy Sole Leather by the ordinary method of Tanning, tho' this fault might by good Contrivance be mended.

As thick as this poor Beaſt's Hide was, a Bullet made Shift

to enter it and fetch him down. It was found all alone, tho' Buffaloes Seldom are. They uſually range about in Herds, like other cattle, and, tho' they differ ſomething in figure, are certainly of the Same Species. There are two Reaſons for this Opinion: the Fleſh of both has exactly the ſame taſte, and the mixed Breed betwixt both, they ſay, will generate. All the Difference I could perceive between the Fleſh of Buffalo and Common Beef was, that the Fleſh of the firſt was much Yellower than that of the other, and the Lean ſomething tougher. 1729 Nov.

The Men were ſo delighted with this new dyet, that the Gridiron and Frying-Pan had no more reſt all night, than a poor Huſband Subject to Curtain Lectures. Buffaloes may be eaſily tamed when they are taken Young. The beſt way to catch them is to carry a Milch Mare into the Woods, and when you find a Cow and Calf, to kill the Cow, and then having catch'd the Calf, to Suckle it upon the Mare. After once or twice Sucking Her, it will follow her Home, and become as gentle as another calf.

If we cou'd get into a breed of them, they might be made very uſefull, not only for the Dairy, by giving an Ocean of Milk, but alſo for drawing vaſt and cumberſome Weights by their prodigious Strength. Theſe, with the other Advantages I mention'd before, wou'd make this ſort of Cattle more profitable to the owner, than any other we are acquainted with, though they would need a world of Provender.

Before we marcht this Morning, every man took care to pack 12
up ſome Buffalo Steaks in his Wallet, beſides what he crammed into his Belly. When Proviſions were Plenty, we always found it Difficult to get out early, being too much Embarraſt with a long-winded Breakfaſt.

However, by the Strength of our Beef, we made a ſhift to walk about 12 Miles, croſſing Blewing and Tewaw-homini Creeks.

1729 Nov. And becauſe this laſt Stream receiv'd its Appellation from the Diſaſter of a Tuſcarora Indian, it will not be Straggling much out of the way to ſay ſomething of that Particular Nation.

Theſe Indians were heretofore very numerous and powerful, making, within time of Memory, at leaſt a Thouſand Fighting Men. Their Habitation, before the War with Carolina, was on the North Branch of Neuſe River, commonly call'd Connecta Creek, in a pleaſant and fruitful Country. But now the few that are left of that Nation live on the North Side of Moratuck, which is all that Part of Roanok below the great Falls, towards Albemarle Sound.

Formerly there were Seven Towns of theſe Savages, lying not far from each other, but now their Number is greatly reduc'd.

The Trade they have had the Misfortune to drive with the Engliſh has furniſht them conſtantly with Rum, which they have uſed ſo immoderately, that, what with the Diſtempers, and what with the Quarrels it begat amongſt them, it has proved a double Deſtruction.

But the greateſt Conſumption of theſe ſavages happen'd by the war about Twenty-Five years ago, on Account of ſome Injuſtice the Inhabitants of that Province had done them about their Lands.

It was on that Provocation they reſented their wrongs a little too ſeverely upon Mr. Lawſon, who, under Colour of being Surveyor gen'l, had encroacht too much upon their Territories, at which they were ſo enrag'd, that they waylaid him, and cut his Throat from Ear to Ear, but at the ſame time releaſ'd the Baron de Graffenried, whom they had Seized for Company, becauſe it appear'd plainly he had done them no Wrong.

This Blow was followed by ſome other Bloody Actions on the Part of the Indians, which brought on the War, wherein many of them were but off, and many were oblig'd to flee for Refuge to the Senecas, ſo that now there remain ſo few, that

they are in Danger of bing quite exterminated by the Catawbas, their mortal Enemies. 1729 Nov.

Theſe Indians have a very odd Tradition amongſt them, that many years ago, their Nation was grown ſo diſhoneſt, that no man cou'd keep any Goods, or ſo much as his loving Wife to himſelf. That, however, their God, being unwilling to root them out for their crimes, did them the honour to ſend a Meſſenger from Heaven to inſtruct them, and ſet Them a perfect Example of Integrity and kind Behavior towards one another.

But this holy Perſon, with all his Eloquence and Sanctity of Life, was able to make very little Reformation amongſt them. Some few Old Men did liſten a little to his Wholeſome Advice, but all the Young fellows were quite incorrigible. They not only Neglected his Precepts, but derided and Evil Entreated his Perſon. At laſt, taking upon Him to reprove ſome Young Rakes of the Conechta Clan very ſharply for their impiety, they were ſo provok'd at the Freedom of his Rebukes, that they tied him to a Tree, and ſhot him with Arrows through the Heart. But their God took inſtant Vengeance on all who had a hand in that Monſtrous Act, by Lightning from Heaven, & has ever ſince viſited their Nation with a continued Train of Calamities, nor will he ever leave off puniſhing, and waſting their People, till he ſhall have blotted every living Soul of them out of the World.

Our Hunters ſhot nothing this whole day but a ſtraggling Bear, which happen'd to fall by the Hand of the very Perſon who had been lately diſarm'd and put to flight, for which he declar'd War againſt the whole Species.

We purſued our Journey with all Diligence, and forded 13
Ohimpamony Creek about Noon, and from thence proceeded to Yatapſco, which we cou'd not croſs without difficulty. The Beavers had dammed up the Water much higher than we found

1729 Nov. it at our going up, ſo that we were oblig'd to lay a Bridge over a part that was ſhallower than the reſt, to facilitate our paſſage.

Beavers have more of Inſtinct, that Half-Brother of Reaſon, than any other Animal, eſpecially in matters of Self-Preſervation. In their Houſes they always contrive a Sally-Port, both towards the Land and towards the Water, that ſo they may eſcape by One, if their Retreat ſhou'd happen to be cut off at the other.

They perform all their Works in the Dead of Night, to avoid Diſcovery, and are kept diligently to it by the Maſter Beaver, which by his age or ſtrength has gain'd to himſelf an Authority over the reſt. If any of the Gang happen to be lazy, or will not exert himſelf to the utmoſt in felling of Trees, or dragging them the place where they are made uſe of, this Superintendent will not fail to chaſtiſe him with the Flat of the Tail, wherewith he is able to give unmerciful ſtrokes.

They lie Snug in their Houſes all day, unleſs ſome unneighbourly Miller chance to diſturb their repoſe, by demoliſhing their Dams for ſupplying his Mill with Water.

It is rare to ſee one of them, and the Indians for that Reaſon have hardly any way to take them, but by laying Snares near the place where they dam up the Water. But the Engliſh Hunters have found out a more effectual Method, by uſing the following receipt. Take the Large Pride of the Beaver, Squeeze all the Juice out of it, then take the ſmall Pride, and Squeeze out about 5 or 6 Drops. Take the inſide of Saſſafras Bark, Powder it, and mix it with the Liquor, and place this Bait conveniently for your Steel Trap.

The Story of their biting off their Teſticles to compound for their Lives, when they are purſued, is a ſtory taken upon truſt by Pliny, like many others. Nor is it the Beavers' Teſticles that carry the Perfume, but they have a Pair of Glands juſt within the Fundament, as Sweet as Muſk, that perfume their Dung,

and communicate a ſtrong ſcent to their Teſticles, by being plac'd near them. 1729 Nov.

It is true Several creatures have Strange inſtincts for their Preſervation, as the Egyptian Frog, we are told by Elian, will carry a whole Joint of a Reed acroſs its Mouth, that it may not be ſwallow'd by the ibis.

And this Long-neckt fowl will give itſelf a clyſter with its Beak, whenever it finds itſelf too coſtive or feveriſh. The Dogs of that Country lap the Water of the Nile in a full Trot, that they may not be Snapped by the Crocodiles. Both Beavers and Wolves, we know, when one of their Legs is caught in a Steel Trap, will bite it off, that they may eſcape with the reſt. The Fleſh of the Beavers is tough and dry, all but the Tail, which, like the Parrot's Tongue, was one of the far-fetched Rarities with which Heliogabalus uſed to furniſh his Luxurious Table.

The Fur of theſe creatures is very valuable, eſpecially in the more Northern Countries, where it is longer and finer. This the Dutch have lately contriv'd to mix with their Wool, and Weave into a Sort of Drugget, that is not only warm, but wonderfully light and Soft. They alſo make Gloves and Stockings of it, that keep out the Cold almoſt as well as the Fur itſelf, and do not look quite ſo Savage.

There is a deal of Rich low Ground on Yapatſco Creek, but I believe liable to be overflow'd in a freſh. However, it might be proper enough for Rice, which receives but little Injury from Water.

We encampt on the Banks of Maſſamony Creek, after a Journey of more than 11 Miles. By the way we Shot a fat Doe and a wild Turkey, which fed us all plentifully. And we have reaſon to ſay, by our own happy Experience, that no man need to deſpair of his daily Bread in the Woods, whoſe faith is but half ſo large as his Stomach.

1729 Nov. 14 Being at length happily arriv'd within 20 Miles of the uppermoſt Inhabitants, we deſpacht two Men who had the ableſt Horſes, to go before, and get a Beef kill'd and ſome Bread bak'd to refreſh their Fellow Travellers, upon their arrival. They had likewiſe Orders to hire an expreſs to carry a Letter to the Governor, giving an Account that we were all returned in Safety. This was the more neceſſary, becauſe we had been ſo long abſent that many now began to fear we were, by this time, Scalpt and barbacu'd by the Indians.

We decampt with the reſt of the People about ten a clock, and marched near 12 Miles. In our way we Croſt Nutbuſh Creek, and 4 Miles farther we came upon a beautiful Branch of Great Creek, where we took up our Quarters. The Tent was pitched upon an Eminence, which overlookt a wide Piece of low Grounds, cover'd with Reeds and watered by a Cryſtal Stream, gliding thro' the Middle of it. On the Other Side of this delightful Valley, which was about half a Mile wide, roſe a Hill that terminated the View, and in the figure of a Semicircle cloſed in upon the oppoſite Side of the Valley. This had a moſt agreeable Effect upon the Eye, and wanted nothing but Cattle grazing in the Meadow, and Sheep and Goats feeding on the Hill, to make it a Compleat Rural LANDSCAPE.

The Indian kill'd a Fawn, which, being upon its growth, was not fat, but made ſome amends by being tender. He alſo Shot an Otter, but our People were now better fed than to eat ſuch Coarſe Food. The truth of it is, the Fleſh of this Creature has a rank Fiſhy taſte, and for that reaſon might be a proper Regale for the Samoeids, who drink the CZAR or MUSCOVY's health and toaſt their Miſtreſſes in a Bumper of Train Oil.

The Carthuſians, to ſave their Vow of eating no Fleſh, pronounce this Amphibious Animal to be a Fiſh, and feed upon it as ſuch, without Wounding their Conſciences.

The Skin of the Otter is very Soft, and the Swedes make

Caps and Socks of it, not only for Warmth, but alſo becauſe they fancy it Strengthens the Nerves, and is good againſt all Diſtempers of the Brain. 1729 Nov.

The otter is a great Devourer of Fiſh, which are its Natural Food, and whenever it betakes itſelf to a Vegetable Dyet, it is as ſome high-Spirited Wives obey their Huſbands, by pure Neceſſity. They dive after their Prey, tho' they can't continue long under Water, but thruſt their Noſes up to the Surface now and then for Breath. They are great Enemies to Weirs Set up in the Rivers to catch Fiſh, devouring or biting to pieces all they find there. Nor is it either eaſy to fright them from this kind of Robbery, or to deſtroy them. The beſt way I cou'd ever find was to float an Old Wheel juſt by the Weir, and ſo ſoon as the Otter has taken a large Fiſh, he will get upon the Wheel to eat it more at his eaſe, which may give you an Opportunity of firing upon him from the Shoar.

One of our People Shot a large Gray Squirrel with a very Buſhy Tail, a ſingular uſe of which our merry Indian diſcover'd to us. He ſaid whenever this little Animal has occaſion to croſs a run of Water, he launches a Chip or Piece of Bark into the Water, on which he embarks, and, holding up his Tail to the wind, he Sails over very Safely. If This be true, it is probable men learnt at firſt the uſe of Sails from theſe ingenious little Animals, as the Hottentots learnt the Phyſical uſe of moſt of their Plants from the Baboons.

About three Miles from our Camp we paſſed GREAT CREEK, 15 and then, after traverſing very barren grounds for 5 Miles together, we croſt the Tradeing Path, and ſoon after had the pleaſure of reaching the uppermoſt Inhabitant. This was a Plantation belonging to colonel Mumford, where our Men almoſt burſt themſelves with Potatoes and Milk. Yet as great a Curioſity as a Houſe was to us Foreſters, ſtill we choſe to lie in the Tent, as being much the cleaner and ſweeter Lodging.

1729 Nov. The Tradeing Path above-mention'd receives its Name from being the Route the Traders take with their Caravans, when they go to traffick with the Catawbas and other Southern Indians. The Catawbas live about 250 Miles beyond Roanoke River, and yet our Traders find their Account in tranſporting Goods from Virginia to trade with them at their own Towne.

The Common Method of carrying on this Indian Commerce is as follows: Gentlemen ſend for Goods proper for ſuch a Trade from England, and then either Venture them out at their own Riſk to the Indian Towns, or elſe credit ſome Traders with them of Subſtance and Reputation, to be paid in Skins at a certain Price agreed betwixt them.

The Goods for the Indian Trade conſiſt chiefly in Guns, Powder, Shot, Hatchets, (which the Indians call Tomahawks,) Kettles, red & blue Planes, Duffields, Stroudwater blankets, and ſome Cutlary Wares, Braſs Rings and other Trinkets.

Theſe Wares are made up into Packs and Carry'd upon Horſes, each Load being from 150 to 200 Pounds, with which they are able to travel about 20 Miles a day, if Forage happen to be plentiful.

Formerly a Hundred Horſes have been employ'd in one of theſe Indian Caravans, under the Conduct of 15 or 16 Perſons only, but now the Trade is much impair'd, inſomuch that they ſeldom go with half that Number.

The Courſe from Roanoke to the Catawbas is laid down neareſt South-weſt, and lies thro' a fine Country, that is Water'd by Several beautiful Rivers.

Thoſe of the greateſt Note are, firſt, Tar river, which is the uppear Part of Pamptico, Flat river, Little river and Eno river, all three Branches of Neuſe.

Between Eno and Saxapahaw rivers are the Haw old fields, which have the Reputation of containing the moſt fertile high land in this part of the World, lying in a Body of about 50,000 acres.

This Saxapahaw is the upper Part of Cape Fair River, the falls of which lye many Miles below the Trading Path. 1729 Nov.

Some Mountains overlook this Rich Spot of Land, from whence all the Soil waſhes down into the Plane, and is the Cauſe of its exceeding Fertility. Not far from thence the Path croſſes ARAMANCHY River, a branch of Saxapahaw, and about 40 Miles beyond that, Deep River, which is the N Branch of Pedee. Then 40 miles beyond that, the Path interſects the Yadkin, which is there half a Mile over, and is ſuppoſed to be the South Branch of the ſame Pedee.

The Soil is exceedingly rich on both ſides the Yadkin, abounding in rank Graſs and prodigiouſly large Trees; and for plenty of Fiſh, Fowl and Veniſon, is inferior to No Part of the Northern Continent. There the Traders commonly lie Still for ſome days, to recruit their Horſes' Fleſh as well as to recover their own Spirits. Six Miles further is Crane Creek, ſo nam'd from its being the Rendezvous of great Armies of Cranes, which wage a more cruel War at this day, with the Frogs and the Fiſh, than they uſ'd to do with the Pigmies in the Days of Homer.

About three-ſcore Miles more bring you to the firſt Town of the Catawbas, call'd Nauvaſa, ſituated on the banks of Santee river. Beſides this Town there are five Others belonging to the ſame Nation, lying all on the ſame Stream, within the Diſtance of 20 Miles.

Theſe Indians were all call'd formerly by the general Name of the Uſherees, and were a very Numerous and Powerful People. But the frequent Slaughters made upon them by the Northern Indians, and, what has been ſtill more deſtructive by far, the Intemperance and Foul Diſtempers introduc'd amongſt them by the Carolina Traders, have now reduc'd their Numbers to little More than 400 Fighting Men, beſides Women & Children. It is a charming Place where they live, the Air very Wholeſome, the Soil fertile, and the Winters ever mild and Serene.

1729 Nov. In Santee river, as in Several others of Carolina, a Small Kind of allegator is frequently seen, which perfumes the Water with a Musky Smell. They Seldom exceed Eight Feet in Length in these parts, whereas, near the Equinoctial, they come up to twelve or Fourteen. And the heat of the Climate don't only make them bigger, but more Fierce and Voracious. They watch the Cattle there when they come to drink and Cool themselves in the River; and because they are not able to drag them into the Deep Water, they make up by Stratagem what they want in Force. They Swallow great Stones, the Weight of which being added to their Strength, enables them to tug a Moderate Cow under Water, and as soon as they have drown'd her, they discharge the Stones out of their Maw and then feast upon the Carcass. However, as Fierce and as Strong as these Monsters are, the Indians will Surprise them Napping as they float upon the Surface, get astride upon their Necks, then whip a short piece of wood like a Truncheon into their Jaws, & holding the Ends with their two hands, hinder them from diving by keeping their mouths open, and when they are almost Spent, they will make to the shoar, where their Riders knock them on the Head and Eat them. This Amphibious Animal is a Smaller kind of Crocodile, having the Same Shape exactly, only the Crocodile of the Nile is twice as long, being when full grown from 20 to Thirty Feet. This Enormous Length is the more to be wonder'd at, because the Crocodile is hatcht from an Egg very little larger than that of a Goose. It has a long Head, which it can open very wide, with very Sharp & Strong teeth. Their Eyes are Small, their Legs Short, with Claws upon their Feet. Their Tail makes half the Length of their Body, and the whole is guarded with hard impenetrable Scales, except the Belly, which is much Softer and Smoother. They keep much upon the Land in the day time, but towards the Evening retire into the Water to avoid the Cold Dews of the Night. They run pretty

faſt right forward, but are very awkward and Slow in turning, by reaſon of their unwieldy Length. It is an Error that they have no Tongue, without which they cou'd hardly Swallow their Food; but in eating they move the upper Jaw only, Contrary to all other Animals. The way of catching them in Egypt is, with a Strong Hook fixt to the End of a chain and baited with a joynt of Pork, which they are very fond of. But a live Hog is generally tyed near, the Cry of which allures them to the Hook. This Account of the Crocodile will agree in moſt particulars with the Alligator, only the Bigneſs of the laſt cannot entitle it to the Name of "Leviathan," which Job gave formerly to the crocodile, and not to the Whale, as ſome Interpreters wou'd make us believe. 1729 Nov.

So Soon as the Catawba Indians are inform'd of the Approach of the Virginia Caravans, they ſend a Detachment of their Warriors to bid them Welcome, and eſcort them Safe to their Town, where they are receiv'd with great Marks of Diſtinction. And their Courteſys to the VIRGINIA Traders, I dare ſay, are very Sincere, becauſe they ſell them better Goods and better Pennyworths than the Traders of Carolina. They commonly reſide among the Indians till they have barter'd their Goods away for Skins, with which they load their Horſes and come back by the Same Path they went.

There are generally ſome Carolina Traders that conſtantly live among the Catawbas, and pretend to Exerciſe a dictatorial Authority over them. Theſe petty Rulers don't only teach the honeſter Savages all ſorts of Debauchery, but are unfair in their dealings, and uſe them with all kinds of Oppreſſion. Nor has their Behaviour been at all better to the reſt of the Indian Nations, among whom they reſide, by abuſing their Women and Evil-entreating their Men; and, by the way, this was the true Reaſon of the fatal War which the Nations roundabout made upon Carolina in the year 1713.

1729 Nov. Then it was that all the Neighbouring Indians, grown weary of the Tyranny and Injuſtice with which they had been abuſ'd for many Years, reſolv'd to endure their bondage no longer, but enter'd into General Confederacy againſt their Oppreſſors of Carolina.

The Indians open'd the War by knocking moſt of thoſe little Tyrants on the Head that dwelt amongſt them, under pretence of regulating their Commerce, and from thence Carry'd their Reſentment ſo far as to endanger both NORTH and SOUTH CAROLINA.

16 We gave Orders that the Horſes ſhou'd paſs Roanoak River at Moniſep Ford, while moſt of the Baggage was tranſported in a Canoe.

We landed at the Plantation of cornelius Keith, where I beheld the wretchedeſt Scene of Poverty I had ever met with in this happy Part of the World. The Man, his Wife and Six Small Children, liv'd in a Penn, like ſo many Cattle, without any Roof over their Heads but that of Heaven. And this was their airy Reſidence in the Day time, but then there was a Fodder Stack not far from this Incloſure, in which the whole Family ſhelter'd themſelves a night's and in bad weather.

However, 'twas almoſt worth while to be as poor as this Man was, to be as perfectly contented. All his Wants proceeded from Indolence, and not from Misfortune. He had good Land, as well as good Health and good Limbs to work it, and, beſides, had a Trade very uſeful to all the Inhabitants round about. He cou'd make and ſet up Quern Stones very well, and had proper Materials for that purpoſe juſt at Hand, if he cou'd have taken the pains to fetch them.

There is no other kind of Mills in thoſe remote parts, and, therefore, if the Man wou'd have Workt at his Trade, he might have liv'd very comfortably. The poor woman had a little

more Induſtry, and Spun Cotton enough to make a thin covering for her own and her children's Nakedneſs. 1729 Nov.

I am ſorry to ſay it, but Idleneſs is the general character of the Men in the Southern Parts of this Colony as well as in North Carolina. The Air is ſo mild, and the ſoil ſo fruitful, that very little Labour is requir'd to fill their Bellies, eſpecially where the Woods afford ſuch Plenty of Game. Theſe advantages diſcharge the Men from the Neceſſity of killing themſelves with Work, and then for the other Article of Raiment, a very little of that will ſuffice in ſo temperate a Climate. But ſo much as is abſolutely Neceſſary falls to the good women's Share to provide. They all Spin, weave and knit, whereby they make a good Shift to cloath the whole Family; and to their credit be it recorded, many of them do it very completely, and thereby reproach their Huſbands' Lazineſs in the moſt inoffenſive way, that is to ſay, by diſcovering a better Spirit of Induſtry in themſelves.

From thence we mov'd forward to Colo Mumford's other Plantation, under the Care of Miles Riley, where, by that Gentleman's Directions, we were again Supply'd with many good things. Here it was we diſcharg'd our Worthy Friend and Fellow Travellaur, Mr. Bearſkin, who had ſo plentifully Supplyed us with Proviſions during our long Expedition. We rewarded Him to his Heart's content, ſo that he return'd to his Town loaden, both with Riches and the Reputation of haveing been a great Diſcoverer.

This being Sunday, we were Seaſonably put in mind how much we were oblig'd to be thankfull for our happy return to the Inhabitants. Indeed, we had great reaſon to reflect with Gratitude on the Signal Mercies we had receiv'd. Firſt, that we had, day by day, been fed by the Bountifull hand of Providence in the deſolate Wilderneſs, Inſomuch that if any of our 17

1729 Nov. People wanted one Single Meal during the whole Expedition, it was intirely owing to their own imprudent Management.

Secondly, that not one Man of our whole Company, had any Violent Diſtemper or bad Accident Befall him, from One End of the Line to the other. The very worſt that happen'd was, that One of them gave himſelf a Smart cut on the Pan of his knee with a Tomahawk, which we had the good Fortune to cure in a Short time, without the help of a Surgeon.

As for the Miſadventures of Sticking in the Mire and falling into Rivers and Creeks, they were rather Subjects of Mirth than complaint, and ſerv'd only to diverſify our Travels with a little farcicall Variety. And, laſtly, that many uncommon Incidents have concurr'd to proſper our Undertaking. We had not only a dry Spring before we went out, but the preceding Winter, and even a Year or two before, had been much dryer than Ordinary. This made not only the Diſmal, but likewiſe moſt of the Sunken Grounds near the Sea-Side, juſt hard enough to bear us, which otherwiſe had been quite unpaſſible.

And the whole time we were upon the Buſineſs, which was in all about Sixteen Weeks, we were never catch't in the Rain except once, Nor was our Progreſs Interrupted by bad Weather above 3 or 4 days at moſt. Beſides all this, we were Surpriz'd by no Indian Enemy, but all of us brought our Scalps back Safe upon our Heads.

This cruel Method of Scalping of Enemies is practiſ'd by all the Savages in America, and perhaps is not the leaſt proof of their Original from the Northern Inhabitants of Aſia. Among the Ancient Scythians it was conſtantly uſ'd, who carry'd about theſe hairy Scalps as Trophies of Victory. They ſerv'd them too as Towels at home, and Trappings for their Horſes abroad. But theſe were not content with the Skin of their Enemies' Heads, but alſo made uſe of their Sculls for cups to drink out of

upon high Feſtival days, & made greater Oſtentation of them than if they had been made of Gold or the pureſt cryſtal. 1729 Nov.

Beſides the Duties of the Day, we chriſten'd one of our Men who had been bred a Quaker. The Man deſir'd this of his own mere Motion, without being tamper'd with by the Parſon, who was willing every one ſhou'd go to Heaven his own way. But whether he did it by the Conviction of his Own Reaſon, or to get rid of ſome Troubleſome Forms and Reſtraints, to which the Saints of that Perſwaſion are Subject, I can't Poſitively ſay.

We proceeded over a Levil Road 12 Miles, as far as George 18
Hixe's Plantation, on the South Side Meherrin River, Our Courſe being for the moſt part North-Eaſt. By the way we hired a Cart to tranſport our Baggage, that we might the better befriend our Jaded Horſes.

Within 2 Miles of our Journey's End this day, we met the Expreſs We had ſent the Saturday before to give Notice of our Arrival. He had been almoſt as Expeditious as a carrier Pigeon, rideing in 2 Days no leſs than 200 Miles.

All the Grandees of the Sappony Nation did us the Honour to repair hither to meet us, and our worthy Friend and Fellow Traveller, Bearſkin, appear'd among the graveſt of them in his Robes of ceremony. Four Young Ladies of the firſt Quality came with them, who had more the Air of cleanlineſs than any copper-Colour'd Beauties I had ever ſeen; Yet we reſiſted all their Charms, Notwithſtanding the long Faſt we had kept from the Sex, and the Bear Dyet we had been ſo long engag'd in. Nor can I ſay the Price they ſat upon their Charms was at all Exorbitant. A Princeſs for a Pair of Red Stockings can't, ſurely, be thought buying Repentance much too dear.

The Men had ſomething great and Venerable in their countenances, beyond the common Mien of Savages; and indeed they ever had the Reputation of being the Honeſteſt, as well as the braveſt Indians we have ever been acquainted with.

1729 Nov. This People is now made up of the Remnant of Several other Nations, of which the moſt conſiderable are the Sapponys, the Occaneches, and Steukenhocks, who not finding themſelves Separately Numerous enough for their Defence, have agreed to unite into one Body, and all of them now go under the Name of the Sapponys.

Each of theſe was formerly a diſtinct Nation, or rather a Several clan or Canton of the Same Nation, Speaking the Same Language, and uſing the ſame Cuſtoms. But their perpetual Wars againſt all other Indians, in time, reduc'd them ſo low as as to make it Neceſſary to join their Forces together.

They dwelt formerly not far below the Mountains, upon Yadkin River, about 200 Miles Weſt and by South from the Falls of Roanoak. But about 25 Years ago they took Refuge in Virginia, being no longer in condition to make Head not only againſt the Northern Indians, who are their Implacable enemies, but alſo againſt moſt of thoſe to the South. All the Nations round about, bearing in mind the Havock theſe Indians uſ'd formerly to make among their Anceſtors in the Inſolence of their Power, did at length avenge it Home upon them, and made them glad to apply to this Government for protection.

Colo Spotſwood, our then lieut. governor, having a good Opinion of their Fidelity & Courage, Settled them at Chriſtanna, ten Miles north of Roanoak, upon the belief that they wou'd be a good Barrier on that Side of the Country, againſt the Incurſion of all Foreign Indians. And in Earneſt they wou'd have Serv'd well enough for that Purpoſe, if the White People in the Neighbourhood had not debauch't their Morals, and ruin'd their Health with Rum, which was the Cauſe of many diſorders, and ended at laſt in a barbarous Murder committed by one of theſe Indians when he was drunk, for which the poor Wretch was executed when he was ſober.

It was matter of great Concern to them, however, that one of

their Grandees ſhould be put to ſo ignominious a Death. All Indians have as great an Averſion to hanging as the Muſcovites, tho' perhaps not for the ſame cleanly reaſon: Theſe laſt believing that the Soul of one that dies in this manner, being forc'd to Sally out of the Body at the Poſtern, muſt needs be defiled. The Sapponys took this Execution ſo much to Heart, that they ſoon after quitted their Settlement and remov'd in a Body to the Cataubas. 1729 Nov.

The Daughter of the TETERO KING went away with the Sapponys, but being the laſt of her Nation, and fearing ſhe Shou'd not be treated according to her Rank, poiſon'd herſelf, like an Old Roman, with the Root of the Trumpet-Plant. Her Father dy'd 2 Years before, who was the moſt intrepid Indian we have been acquainted with. He had made himſelf terrible to all other Indians by His Exploits, and had eſcaped ſo many Dangers that he was eſteem'd invulnerable. But at laſt he dy'd of a Pleuriſy, the laſt Man of his Race and Nation, leaving only that unhappy Daughter behind him, who would not long ſurvive Him.

The moſt uncommon Circumſtance in this Indian viſit Was, that they all came on Horſe-back, which was certainly intended for a Piece of State, becauſe the Diſtance was but 3 Miles, and 'tis likely they had walk't a foot twice as far to catch their Horſes. The Men rode more awkwardly than any Dutch Sailor, and the Ladies beſtrode their Palfreys a la mode de France, but were ſo baſhful about it, that there was no perſuading them to Mount till they were quite out of our Sight.

The French Women uſe to ride a-ſtraddle, not ſo much to make them ſit firmer in the Saddle, as from the hopes the ſame thing might peradventure befall them that once happen'd to the Nun of ORLEANS, who eſcaping out of a Nunnery, took Poſt en CAVALIER, and in ten Miles' hard rideing had the good Fortune to have all the Tokens of a Man break out upon her.

1729 Nov. This Piece of Hiſtory ought to be the more credible, becauſe it leans upon much the ſame Degree of Proof as the Tale of Biſhop Burnet's Two Italian NUNS, who, according to his Lordſhip's Account, underwent the Same happy Metamorphoſis, probably by ſome other Violent Exerciſe.

19 From hence we deſpatch't the Cart with our Baggage under a Guard, and croſſt MEHERRIN River, which was not 30 Yards wide in that Place. By the help of Freſh Horſes that had been ſent us, we now began to mend our Pace, which was alſo quicken'd by the Strong Inclinations we had to get Home.

In the Diſtance of 5 Miles we forded MEHERRIN creek, which was very near as broad as the River. About 8 Miles farther we came to STURGEON-Creek, ſo call'd from the Dexterity an OCCAANECHY Indian ſhewed there in Catching one of thoſe Royal Fiſh, which was perform'd after the following Manner.

In the Summer time 'tis no unuſual thing for Sturgeons to Sleep on the Surface of the Water, and one of them having wander'd up into this Creek in the Spring, was floating in that drowſy condition.

The Indian, above mention'd, ran up to the Neck into the Creek a little below the Place where he diſcover'd the Fiſh, expecting the Stream wou'd ſoon bring his Game down to Him. He judg'd the Matter right, and as Soon as it came within his Reach, he whip't a running Nooſe over his Jole. This waked the Sturgeon, which being Strong in its own Element darted immediately under Water and dragg'd the Indian after Him. The Man made it a Point of Honour to keep his Hold, which he did to the Apparent Danger of being drown'd. Sometimes both the Indian and the Fiſh diſappear'd for a Quarter of a Minute, & then roſe at ſome Diſtance from where they dived. At this rate they continued flouncing about, Sometimes above and ſometimes

under Water, for a conſiderable time, till at laſt the Hero Suffocated his Adverſary, and haled his Body aſhoar in Triumph. 1729 Nov.

About Six Miles beyond that, we paſſed over Wicco-quoi creek, Named ſo from the Multitude of Rocks over which the Water tumbles in a Freſh, with a bellowing Noiſe. Not far from where we went over, is a Rock much higher than the reſt, that Strikes the Eye with agreeable Horror, and near it a very Talkative Eccho, that, like a fluent Help-meet, will return her good Man Seven Words for one, & after all, be Sure to have the Laſt. It ſpeaks not only the Language of Men, but alſo of Birds & Beaſts, and often a Single Wild Gooſe is cheated into the Belief that Some of his Company are not far off, by hearing his own cry multiply'd; & 'tis pleaſant to ſee in what a flutter the Poor Bird is, when he finds himſelf diſappointed.

On the Banks of this creek are very broad low-Grounds in many Places, and abundance of good high-Land, tho' a little Subject to Floods.

We had but two Miles more to Capt. Embry's, where we found the Houſekeeping much better than the Houſe. Our Bountifull Landlady had ſet her Oven and all her Spits, Pots, Gridirons and Saucepans to work, to diverſify our Entertainment, tho' after all it prov'd but a Mahommetan Feaſt, there being Nothing to drink but Water. The worſt of it was, we had unluckily outrid the Baggage, and for that Reaſon were oblig'd to Lodge very Sociably in the Same Apartment with the Family, where, reckoning Women and Children, we muſter'd in all no leſs than Nine Perſons, who all pigg'd loveingly together.

In the Morning colo Bolling, who had been Surveying in the Neighbourhood, and Mr. Walker, who dwelt not far off, came to viſit us; And the laſt of theſe Worthy Gentlemen, fearing that our drinking ſo much Water might incline us to Pleuriſys, brought us a kind Supply both of Wine and cyder.

1729 Nov. It was Noon before we cou'd diſengage Ourſelves from the Courteſies of this Place, and then the two Gentlemen above-mention'd were ſo good as to accompany us that day's Journey, tho' they cou'd by no means approve of our LITHUANIAN Faſhion or Diſmounting now and then, in order to walk part of the way on foot.

We croſ't Nottoway River not far from our Landlord's Houſe, where it ſeem'd to be about 25 Yards over. This River divides the County of Prince George from that of BRUNSWICK. We had not gone 8 Miles farther before our Eyes were bleſſ'd with the Sight of Sapponi chappel, which was the firſt Houſe of Prayer we had ſeen for more than two calendar Months.

About 3 Miles beyond that, we paſſed over Stony Creek, where One of thoſe that Guarded the Baggage kill'd a Polcat, upon which he made a Comfortable Repaſt. Thoſe of his company were ſo SQUEAMISH they cou'd not be perſuaded at firſt to taſt, as they ſaid, of ſo unſavoury an Animal; but ſeeing the Man Smack his Lips with more pleaſure than uſual, they ventur'd at laſt to be of his Meſs, and inſtead of finding the Fleſh rank and high-taſted, they own'd it to be the Sweeteſt Morſel they had ever eat in their Lives.

The ill Savour of this little Beaſt lys altogether in its Urine, which Nature has made ſo deteſtably ill-ſcented on purpoſe to furniſh a helpleſs Creature with Something to defend itſelf. For as ſome Brutes have Horns and Hoofs, and others are arm'd with Claws, Teeth and Tuſhes for their Defence; and as Some Spit a Sort of Poiſon at their Adverſaries, like the Paco; and others dart Quills at their Purſuers, like the Porcupine; and as ſome have no Weapons to help themſelves but their Tongue, and others none but their Tails; ſo the poor Polcat's ſafety lies altogether in the irreſiſtible Stench of its Water; inſomuch that when it finds itſelf in Danger from an Enemy, it Moiſtens its buſhy Tail plentifully with this Liquid Ammunition, and, then

with great fury, Sprinkles it like a Shower of Rain full into the Eyes of its Aſſailant, by which it gains time to make its Eſcape. 1729 Nov.

Nor is the Polcat the only Animal that defends itſelf by a Stink. At the CAPE OF GOOD HOPE is a little Beaſt, call'd a Stinker, as big as a Fox, and Shap't like a Ferret, which being purſued has no way to ſave himſelf but by farting and Squittering. And then ſuch a Stench enſues that None of its Purſuers can Poſſibly ſtand it.

At the End of 30 good Miles, we arriv'd in the Evening at colo Bolling's, where firſt, from a Primitive Courſe of Life, we began to relapſe into Luxury. This Gentleman lives within Hearing of the Falls of Appamatuck River, which are very Noiſy whenever a Flood happens to roll a greater ſtream than ordinary over the Rocks.

The River is Navigable for Small Craft as high as the Falls, and at Some diſtance from thence fetches a compaſs, and runs nearly parallel with James River almoſt as high as the Mountains.

While the commiſſioners fared Sumptuouſly here, the poor Chaplain and two Surveyors, ſtoppt Ten Miles Short at a poor Planter's Houſe, in Pity to their Horſes, made a Saint ANTHONY's Meal, that is, they Supp't upon the Pickings of what Stuck in their Teeth ever ſince Breakfaſt. But to make them amends, the good Man laid them in his own Bed, where they all three neſtled together in one cotton Sheet and one of Brown Oznabrugs, made Still Something Browner by two Months' Copious Perſpiration.

But thoſe worthy Gentlemen were ſo alert in the Morning 21 after their light Supper, that they came up with us before Breakfaſt, & honeſtly paid their Stomachs all they ow'd them.

We made no more than a Sabbath day's Journey from this to the next Hoſpitable Houſe, namely, that of our great Benefactor, Colo Mumford. We had already been much befriended by this

1729 Nov. Gentleman, who, beſides ſending Orders to his Overſeers at Roanoak to let us want for nothing, had, in the Beginning of our Buſineſs, been ſo kind as to recommend moſt of the Men to us who were the faithfull Partners of our Fatigue.

Altho' in moſt other Atchievements thoſe who command are apt to take all the Honour to themſelves of what perhaps was more owing to the Vigour of those who were under them, Yet I muſt be more juſt, and allow theſe brave Fellows their full Share of credit for the Service we perform'd, & muſt declare, that it was in a great Meaſure owing to their Spirit and indefatigable Induſtry that we overcame many Obſtacles in the Courſe of our Line, which till then had been eſteem'd unſurmountable.

Nor muſt I at the Same time omit to do Juſtice to the Surveyors, and particularly to Mr. Mayo, who, beſides an eminent degree of Skill, encounter'd the ſame Hardſhips and underwent the Same Fatigue that the forwardeſt of the Men did, and that with as much Chearfulneſs as if Pain had been his Pleaſure, and Difficulty his real Diverſion.

Here we diſcharg'd the few Men we had left, who were all as Ragged as the Gibeonite Ambassadors, tho', at the Same time, their Rags were very honourable, by the Service they had ſo Vigorouſly performed in making them ſo.

22 A little before Noon we all took leave and diſperſ't to our Several Habitations, where we were ſo happy as to find all our Familys well. This crown'd all our other Bleſſings, and made our Journey as proſperous as it had been painfull.

Thus ended our Second Expedition, in which we extended the Line within the Shadow of the Chariky Mountains, where we were oblig'd to Set up our Pillars, like Hercules, and return Home.

We had now, upon the whole, been out Sixteen Weeks, including going and returning, and had travell'd at leaſt Six

Hundred Miles, and no Small part of that Diſtance on foot. Below, towards the Sea Side, our Courſe lay through MARSHES, SWAMPS, and great Waters; and above, over Steep HILLS, Craggy ROCKS, and Thickets, hardly penetrable. Notwithſtanding this variety of Hardſhips, we may ſay, without Vanity, that we faithfully obey'd the King's Orders, and perform'd the Buſineſs effectually, in which we had the Honour to be employ'd. 1729 Nov.

Nor can we by any Means reproach Ourſelves of having put the Crown to any exorbitant Expenſe in this difficult affair, the whole Charge, from Beginning to End, amounting to no more that One Thouſand Pounds. But let no one concern'd in this painful Expedition complain of the Scantineſs of his Pay, ſo long as His Majeſty has been Graciouſly pleaſ'd to add to our Reward the HONOUR of his ROYAL approbation, and to declare, notwithſtanding the Deſertion of the CAROLINA COMMISSIONERS, that the Line by us run ſhall hereafter Stand as the true Boundary betwixt the GOVERNMENTS OF VIRGINIA AND NORTH CAROLINA.

# APPENDIX

To the Foregoing Journal, containing the second Charter to the Proprietors of CAROLINA, confirming and enlarging the firſt, and alſo ſeveral other acts to which it refers. Theſe are plac'd by themſelves at the End of the Book, that they may not interrupt the Thread of the Story, and the Reader will be more at liberty whether he will pleaſe to read them or not, being ſomething dry and unpleaſant.

## *The Second CHARTER granted by KING CHARLES 2d to the Proprietors of CAROLINA.*

CHARLES, by the GRACE of GOD, &c.: WHEREAS, by our LETTERS PATENT, bearing date the four and twentieth day of march, in the fifteenth year of our Reign, we were graciouſly pleaſ'd to grant unto our right truſty and right well beloved couſin and councellor, Edward, Earl of Clarendon, our high Chancellor of England, Our right truſty and right intirely beloved Couſin and Counſellor, George, Duke of Albemarle, Maſter of our Horſe, our right truſty and well beloved William, now Earl of Craven, our Right truſty and well beloved Counſellor, Anthony, Lord Aſhley, Chancellor of our Exchequer, our right truſty and well beloved Counſellor, Sir George Carterett, Knight and Baronet, vice Chamberlain of our houſehold, our right truſty and well beloved, Sir John Colleton, Knight and Baronet, and Sir William Berkley, Knight, all that Province, Territory, or Tract of Ground, called Carolina, ſituate, lying and being within our Dominions of America, extending from the North End of the Iſland called Luke Iſland, which lys in the Southern Virginia Seas, and within Six and thirty Degrees of the Northern Latitude; and to the Weſt as far as the South Seas; & ſo reſpectively as far as the River of Mathias, which

bordereth upon the Coaſt of Florida, & within one and thirty Degrees of the Northern Latitude, and ſo weſt in a direct Line as far as the South Seas aforeſaid. Now know ye, that, at the humbleſt requeſt of the ſaid Grantees in the aforeſaid Letters Patent named, and as a further mark of our eſpecial favour towards them, we are graciouſly pleaſ'd to enlarge our ſaid Grant unto them according to the Bounds & limits hereafter Specify'd & in favour to the pious and noble purpoſe of the ſaid Edward, Earl of Clarendon, George, Duke of Albemarle, William, Earl of Craven, John, Lord Berkley, Anthony, Lord Aſhley, Sir George Carterett, Sir John Colleton and Sir William Berkley, we do give and grant to them, their Heirs and Aſſigns, all that Province, Territory, or tract of Ground, Situate, lying and being within our Dominions of America aforeſaid, extending North and Eaſtward as far as the North end of Carahtuke River or Inlet, upon a Streight weſterly line to Wyonoake Creek, which lys within or about the Degrees of thirty-ſix and thirty Minutes Northern Latitude, and ſo Weſt in a Direct line as far as the South Seas; & ſouth and weſtward as far as the Degrees of twenty-nine incluſive Northern Latitude, & ſo weſt in a direct line as far as the South ſeas; together with all and Singular ports, harbours, Bays, rivers & inlets belonging unto the Province or Territory aforeſaid. And alſo, all the Soil, lands, fields, Woods, Mountains, ferms, Lakes, Rivers, Bays and Inlets, ſituate, or being within the Bounds or limits laſt before mention'd: with the fiſhing of all Sorts of fiſh, Whales, Sturgeons, and all other Royal fiſhes in the Sea, Bays, Inlets, and Rivers, within the Premiſes, and the fiſh therein taken; together with the royalty of the Sea, upon the Coaſt within the limits aforeſaid. And Moreover, all Veins, Mines and Quarries, as well diſcover'd as not diſcover'd, of Gold, Silver, Gems & precious Stones, and all other whatſoever; be it of Stones, Metals or any other thing found or to be found within the Province, Territory, Inlets and limits aforeſaid. And furthermore. the Patronage & Avowſons of all the Churches & Chappels, which as the Chriſtian Religion ſhall encreaſe within the Province Territory Iſles and limits aforeſaid, Shall happen hereafter to be erected; together with Licence and. Power to build & found Churches & Chappels & Oratories in fit and convenient places, within the ſaid Bound's and Limits; and to Cauſe them to be dedicated and Conſecrated, according to the Eccleſiaſtical Laws of our Kingdom of England; together with all and

Singular the like, and as ample Rights, Iurisdictions. Privilidges; Prerogatives, Royalties, Liberties, Immunities and Franchises of what kind Soever, within the Territory. Isle's Inlets & Limits aforesaid. To have. hold, use. exercise & enjoy the Same as amply, fully and in as ample. a Manner. as any Bishop of Durham in our Kingdom of England, ever heretofore had. held. used. or enjoy'd, or. of right, ought, or could have, use. or enjoy; and then the Said Edward Earl of Clarendon: George. Duke of. Albemarle, William Earl of Craven, John Lord. Berkley, Anthony Lord. Ashley, Sir. George Carterett, Sir John Colleton and Sir William Berkley. their. Heirs and Assigns; We do by these Presents; for us. our Heirs and. Successor's, make. create. and constitute the true and absolute. Lords and Proprietors of the Said Province, or Territory, and of all other, the Premises, saveing alway's the Faith, Allegiance and Sovereign. Dominion, due to us, our Heirs, and Successors. for the same; to have, hold; possess and enjoy. the said Province, Territory, Inlets and all. and singular, other the Premises; to them the said Edward. Earl of Clarendon, George Duke of Albemarle, William Earl of Craven, John Lord Berkley. Anthony Lord Ashley Sir. George. Carteret. Sir John Colleton & Sir William Berkley. their Heirs and Assigns for ever. to be holden of Us. Our Heirs & Successor's as of. Our Manner of East. Greenwich in Kent in free & common Soccage & not in Capite or by Knights. Service yeelding and paying yearly to us. Our. Heirs. & Successors for the Same. the fourth part of all. Gold. & Silver. Oar which within the Limits hereby granted shall. from time to time happen to be found over and besides the yearly. Rent of twenty Marks and the fourth part of the. Gold & Silver. Oar. in and by the said recited Letters. Patents reserv'd and Payable.

And that the Province or Territory hereby granted and described may be dignify'd with as large Titles and. Privileges as any other Parts of our Dominions and Territories. in that Region. Know. ye that we of our further Grace certain knowledge & mere Motion have thought fit to annex the same Tract of Ground and Territory unto the same Province of Carolina and out. of the fulness of our. Royal Power & Prerogative. We do. for Us. Our. Heirs And Successor's annex & unite the Same to the said Province of Carolina And for as much as we have made and ordain'd the aforesaid Edward Earl of Clarendon George Duke of Albemarle, William Earl of Craven.

John Lord Berkley. Anthony Lord Aſhley. Sir George Carteret. Sir John Colleton & Sir William Berkley their Heirs and Aſſigns the true. Lord's and Proprietors of all the Province or. Territory aforeſaid Know. ye therefore moreover the we. repoſing eſpecial truſt & confidence in. their fidelity Wiſdom. Juſtice and Provident. Circumſpection for Us Our Heirs and Succeſſor's do grant full and absolute Power by Vertue of theſe Preſents to them the ſaid Edward Earl of Clarendon. George Duke of Albemarle. William Earl of Craven. John Lord Berkley Anthony Lord Aſhly Sir George. Carteret. Sir John. Colleton and Sir William Berkley and their Heir's & Aſſigns for the good & happy Government of the ſaid whole Province or Territory full Power and Authority to erect. conſtitute & make ſeveral Counties. Baronies. & Colonies of & within the ſaid Provinces. Territories. Land's and Hereditaments in and by ſaid recited Letters Patents. & theſe Preſents granted or. mention'd to be granted as aforeſaid with ſeveral and diſtinct Juriſdictions Power's. Liberties and Priviledges. And alſo to Ordain. make and enact and under their Seals. to Publiſh any Law's and Conſtitutions whatſoever. either appertaining to the Publick State of the ſaid whole Provinee or Territory. or of any diſtinct or. Particular County, Barony. and. Colony of or within the Same. or to the Private utility of Particular Perſons. according to their beſt diſcretion, by & with the advice. Aſſent & Approbation of the Freemen of the Said Province or Territory or of the Freemen of County. Barony or Colony. for which ſuch Law or Conſtitution ſhall be made or the greater Part of them or of their Delegates or Deputies. whom for the enacting of the ſaid Law's when as often as need ſhall require We will that the ſaid Edward Earl of Clarendon. George. Duke of Albemarle William Earl of Craven John Lord. Berkley Anthony Lord Aſhley Sir George Carterett, Sir John. Colleton & Sir William Berkley. their Heirs or Aſſigns. Shall from time to time, aſſemble in Such Manner and form as to them ſhall ſeem beſt, and the ſame Law's duly to Execute upon all People within the ſaid Provinces or. Territory. County Colony. or. Barony the Limits thereof for the time being. which ſhall be Conſtituted under the Power & Government of them. or any of them. either Sailing towards the ſaid Province or Territory of Carolina, or returning from thence towards. England, or any other of Our, or foreign Dominions, by Impoſition of Penalties, Impriſonment, or any other Puniſhment: Yea. if it ſhall. be needfull, and the Quality

of the offence require it. by takeing away Member & Life, either by them the Said Edward. Earl of Clarendon, George Duke of Albemarle. William Earl of Craven, John Lord Berkley. Anthony Lord Aſhley Sir George Carterett. Sir John Colleton & Sir William Berkley. and their Heirs or by them or their Deputies Lieutenants. Judges. Juſtices. Magiſtrates. or. Officers whatſoever as within the Said Province as at Sea, in ſuch. Manner & form as unto the ſaid Edward Earl of Clarendon. George Duke of Albemarle. William Earl of Craven, John. Lord Berkley. Anthony Lord Aſhley, Sir George Carteret, Sir John Colleton, & Sir William Berkley. and their Heirs. ſhall ſeem moſt. convenient, Alſo, to remit. releaſe, pardon and aboliſh, whether before Judgement. or after, all Crimes and offences whatſoever. Againſt the ſaid Law's; and to do all and every other thing and things, which unto the Compleat eſtabliſhment of Juſtice, unto Courts, Seſſions & forms of Judicature and Manners of proceedings therein. do belong altho in theſe Preſents, expreſs mention is not. made thereof. & by Judges to him or them delegated to award proceſs. hold pleas. & determine in all the ſaid Courts, & places of Judicature. all Actions, Suits, and — Cauſes whatſoever, as well Criminal as. Civil, real, mix't perſonal. or of any other kind or. Nature whatſoever, which Law's So as aforeſaid to, be publiſh'd, Our. Pleaſure is & we do enjoyn, require and. Command, ſhall. be abſolutely firm & available in Law; and that all the leige People of Us. our Heirs and Succeſſors, within the ſaid Province or Territory, do obſerve & keep the ſame inviolably in theſe Parts. So far as they concern them, under the Pains & Penalties therein expreſſ'd or to be expreſſ'd provided nevertheleſs, that the ſaid Law's be conſonant to Reaſon, and as near as may be conveniently, agreeable to the Law's & Cuſtoms of this our Realm of England.

And. becauſe ſuch Aſſemblies of freeholder's cannot be ſo ſuddenly call'd as there may be Occaſion to require the Same. we do therefore by theſe Preſents, give & Grant unto the ſaid Edward Earl of Clarendon George. Duke of Albemarle, William Earl of Craven, John Lord Berkley, Anthony Lord Aſhley, Sir George. Carterett. Sir John Colleton. and Sir William Berkley, their Heirs & Aſſigns, by themſelves or their Magiſtrates. in that Behalf, lawfully Authorized, full Power and Authority from time to time, to make & ordain fit and wholeſome Orders & Ordinances, within the Province or. Territory aforeſaid or any County, Barony or. Province of or within the ſame,

to be kep't and obſerv'd, as well for the keeping of the Peace, as for the better Government of the People there abiding. & to publiſh the ſame to all to whom it may concern. which ordinances we do, by theſe Preſents. ſtreightly charge and command to be inviolably obſerv'd within the ſame Province. Counties, Territory's, Barony's & Provinces under the Penalties therein expreſſ'd: So as Such Ordinances be reaſonable & not repugnant or contrary, but as near as may be agreeable to the Laws & Statutes of this our Kingdom, of England; and ſo as the ſame Ordinances do not extend to the binding, charging or taking away of the right or Intereſt of any Perſon or. Perſons in their freehold, Goods or. Chattels whatſoever,

And to the end the ſaid Province or Territory, may be more happily encreaſ'd by the Multitude of People reſorting thither & may likewiſe be the more Strongly defended from the Incurſions of Savages and other Enemies, Pirates & Robbers, Therefore, We for Us, Our Heirs and Succeſſor's, do give and grant. by theſe Preſents, Power. Licence and Liberty unto all the Leige People of Us, Our Heirs and Succeſſor's in our Kingdom of England & elſewhere, Within any other our Dominions, Iſlands, Colonies or. Plantations, (excepting thoſe who ſhall be eſpecially forbidden) to tranſport themſelves & Families into the ſaid Province or Territory, with Convenient. Shipping & fitting Proviſions & there to Settle themſelves, dwell and Inhabit, any Law, Act. Statute, Ordinance. or other thing to the contrary. in any wiſe notwithſtanding.

And we will alſo, and of our eſpecial Grace, for us, Our Heirs, & Succeſſor's, do Streightly enjoyn, ordain conſtitute and command, that the Said Province or Territory, ſhall be of our Allegiance; & that all And Singular, the Subjects and. Leige People of Us. Our. Heirs & Succeſſor's, tranſported or to be tranſported, into the ſaid Province, & the Children of them. and ſuch as ſhall decend from them, there born, or hereafter to be born, be, and ſhall be, Denizens & Leige People. of Us. our Heirs, and, Succeſſor's. of this our Kingdom of England, & be in all things, held, treated, and reputed as the Leige faithfull People. of Us, our Heirs and Succeſſors. born within this our Said Kingdom, or any other of our Dominions, and may inherit, or otherwiſe purchaſe & receive, take, hold, buy, & poſſeſs. any Land's, Land's, Tenements, or Hereditaments, within the Said Places, & them may occupy, & enjoy, ſell, alien, and bequeath, as likewiſe all Liberties, Franchiſes & Priviledges of this our Kingdom, and of

other our Dominions aforeſaid, may freely and quietly have, Poſſeſs, and enjoy as our Leige People born within the Same, without the Moleſtation, vexation. grievance or. Trouble. of Us. our Heirs and Succeſſors, any Act. Statute, Ordinance or Proviſion to the contrary notwithſtanding.

And furthermore, that our Subjects of this our ſaid Kingdom of England, & other our Dominions, may be the rather encouraged to undertake this Expedition, with ready & cheerfull Means. Know, Ye, that We, of our eſpecial Grace, certain Knowledge, & mere Motion, do give & Grant by Vertue of the Preſents. as well to the ſaid. Edward Earl of Clarendon, George Duke of Albemarle, William Earl of Craven, John Lord Berkley, Anthony Lord Aſhley, Sir George Carteret, Sir John Colleton & Sir William Berkley and their Heirs, as unto all others as ſhall, from time to time, repair unto the ſaid Province or, Territory. with a purpoſe to inhabit, there or to trade with the Natives thereof, Full Liberty and Licence to trade & Freight in every Part whatſoever of Us, our. Heirs & Succeſſor's, and into the ſaid Province of Carolina, by them, their Servants & Aſſigns, to tranſport all & Singular, their good's, Wares, and Merchandizes, as likewiſe all Sort of Grain whatſoever, & any other thing whatſoever, neceſſary for their food & cloathing, not prohibited by the Law's and Statutes of our Kingdom & Dominions, to be carried out of the ſame, without any let or Moleſtation of Us our Heirs, & Succeſſors, or of any other our Officers or Miniſters whatſoever, Saving alſo to Us, our Heirs, and Succeſſor's, the Cuſtoms & other Duties & Payments due for the ſaid Wares & Merchandizes, according to the ſeveral Rates of the Places from whence the ſame ſhall be tranſported.

We will alſo & by theſe Preſents for. Us. our Heirs Succeſſors, do give and grant Licence by this our Charter, unto the ſaid Edward Earl of Clarendon, George Duke of Albemarle William Earl of Craven. John Lord Berkley, Anthony Lord. Aſhley, Sir George Carteret Sir John Colleton and Sir William Berkley, their Heirs & Aſſigns, and to all the Inhabitants & Dwellers in the Province or Territory aforeſaid, both Preſent and to come, full Power & abſolute Authority to import or unlade, by themſelves or their Servants. Factors or Aſſigns all Merchandizes & Goods whatſoever, that ſhall arriſe of the Fruits & Commodities of the ſaid Province, or Territory, either by Land or Sea, into any of the Parts of us, our Heirs & Suc-

ceſſor's, in our Kingdom of England, Scotland, or Ireland, or otherwiſe, to diſpoſe of the ſaid goods, in the ſaid Parts. and if need be, within one year next after the unlading, to lade the ſaid Merchandizes & Good's again into the ſame, or other Ships & to export the ſame into any other Country's, either of our Dominions or. forreign, being in Amity with Us, our Heirs & Succeſſors, ſo as the reſt of the Cuſtomes, Subſidies & other Duties for the ſame to Us, our Heirs & Succeſſors, as the reſt of Our Subjects, of this our Kingdom for the time being, ſhall be bound to pay, Beyond which we will not that the Inhabitants of the ſaid Province or Territory, ſhall be any way Charged, Provided, Nevertheleſs, and Our Will & Pleaſure is, and We have further, for the Conſiderations aforeſaid, of our eſpecial Grace, certain Knowledge & Mere. Motion, given & Granted, & by theſe Preſents, for Us. our Heirs and Succeſſor's, do give & grant. unto the ſaid Edward Earl of Clarendon, George Duke of Albemarle, William Earl of Craven, John Lord. Berkley, Anthony Lord Aſhley, Sir George Carteret, Sir John Colleton, & Sir William Berkley, their Heirs & Aſſigns, full & free Licence, Liberty, Power, & Authority. at any time or times from & after the feaſt. of St. Micheal the Arch. Angel, which ſhall be in the Year of our Lord Chriſt, one Thouſand Six Hundred, ſixty & Seven.; as well to import and bring into any our Dominions from the ſaid Province of Carolina, or any part thereof, the ſeveral goods & Commodities herein after mention'd; that is to ſay, Silks; Wines, Currants, Rayſons, Capers, Wax, Almonds, Oyl and Olives without paying or anſwering to us our Heirs & Succeſſors, any Cuſtom, Impoſt or other Duty. for, or in reſpect thereof, for and during the time and ſpace of ſeven Years, to Commence & be accompted from, and after the firſt importation of four Tons of any the ſaid Goods in any one Bottom Ship or Veſſel, from the ſaid Province or Territory, into any of our Dominions, as alſo to export and carry out of any of our Dominions into the ſaid Province or Territory, Cuſtom free, all. Sorts of Tools, which be uſeful or neceſſary for the Planters there, in the Accommodation & Improvement of the Premiſes, anything before in theſe Preſents, contain'd, or any Law, Act, Statute, Prohibition, or any other Matter or Thing, heretofore had, made, enacted or provided in any, wiſe notwithſtanding.

And. furthermore of our mere ample & eſpecial Grace, certain Knowledge and mere motion, We do for Us, our Heirs, and Suc-

ceſſors, grant unto the ſaid Edward Earl of Clarendon, George Duke of Albemarle, William Earl of Craven, John Lord Berkley, Anthony Lord Aſhley, Sir George Carteret, Sir John Colleton, & Sir William Berkley, their Heirs & Aſſigns, full & abſolute Power and Authority to make erect and Conſtitute within the Said Province or Territory, & the Iſles & Inlets aforeſaid, Such & ſo Many Sea Parts, Harbours, Creeks and other Places, for diſcharge and unladeing of Goods & Merchandizes out of Ships, Boats and other Veſſels, and for lading of them in ſuch and ſo many places & with ſuch Juriſdictions, Priviledges & Franchiſes, unto the Said Ports belonging, as to them ſhall ſeem moſt expedient; & that all and Singular, the Ships, Boats, & other Veſſels, which ſhall come for Merchandizes and Trade into the ſaid Province or Territory, or ſhall depart out of the ſame, ſhall be laden and unladen at Such Ports only. as ſhall be erected & conſtituted by the ſaid Edward. Earl of Clarendon, George Duke of Albemarle, William Earl of Craven, John Lord Berkley, Anthony, Lord Aſhley, Sir George. Carteret. Sir John Colleton & Sir William Berkley, their Heirs & Aſſigns & not elſewhere, any uſe, Cuſtom, or anything to the contrary in any wiſe notwithſtanding,

And we do furthermore will Appoint & Ordain, & by theſe Preſents, for Us, our Heirs and Succeſſors, do grant unto the ſaid Edward Earl of Clarendon, George Duke of Albemarle, William Earl of Craven, John Lord Berkley, Anthony Lord Aſhley, Sir George Carteret, Sir John Colleton & Sir William Berkley their Heirs & Aſſigns, that they the ſaid Edward Earl of Clarendon, George Duke of Albemarle, William Earl of Craven John Lord Berkley, Anthony Lord Aſhley, Sir George Carteret, Sir John Colleton & Sir William Berkley, their Heirs & Aſſigns, may from time to time forever, have and enjoy the Cuſtoms and Subſidies in the Ports, Harbours, Creeks & other places within the Province aforeſaid, payable for the Goods, Merchandizes, & Wares there Laded, or to be Laded or unladed, the ſaid Cuſtoms to be reaſonably Aſſeſſ'd to upon any Occaſion by themſelves & by & with the conſent of the free people, or the greater part of them, as aforeſaid; to whom we give Power by theſe Preſents, for Us, our Heirs & Succeſſors, upon juſt cause & in due proportion to aſſeſs & impoſe the ſame.

And further, of our eſpecial Grace certain Knowledge & mere Motion, we have given, granted & confirm'd & by theſe Preſents for Us, our Heirs & Succeſſors, do give, Grant & con-

firm unto the ſaid Edward Earl of Clarendon. George Duke of Albemarle, William Earl of Craven John Lord. Berkley, Anthony Lord Aſhley, Sir George. Carteret, Sir John Colleton & Sir William Berkley, their Heirs and Aſſigns, full & abſolute Licence, Power & Authority, that they the ſaid Edward. Earl of Clarendon, George Duke of Albemarle, William Earl of Craven, John Lord Berkley, Anthony Lord Aſhley, Sir George. Carteret, Sir John Colleton, & Sir William Berkley, their Heirs & Aſſigns, from time to time, hereafter for ever, at his and their Will & pleaſure, may Aſſign, alien, grant demiſe or enfeoff. the Premiſes or any part or Parcell thereof to him or them, that ſhall be willing to purchaſe the ſame; and to Such perſon or perſons as they ſhall think fit, to have and to hold to them the ſaid Perſon or Perſons, their Heirs & Aſſigns in Fee Simple or in fee Sayle or for the Term of Life or Lives, or Years to be held of them the ſaid Edward Earl of Clarendon, George Duke of Albemarle, William Earl of Craven, John Lord Berkley, Anthony Lord Aſhley, Sir George Carterett, Sir John Colleton, & Sir William Berkley, their Heirs & Aſ ſigns, by ſuch rents, & Services, and Cuſtoms as ſhall ſeem fit to them the ſaid Edward Earl of Clarendon, George Duke of Albemarle, William Earl of Craven, John Lord, Berkley, Anthony Lord Aſhley, Sir George Carteret Sir John Colleton & Sir William Berkley, their Heirs & Aſſigns & not of Us, our Heirs & Succeſſor's; and to the ſame Perſon and Perſons, & to all & every one of them, We do give & grant, by theſe preſents, for Us our Heirs and Succeſſors, Licence, Authority, & Power that ſuch Perſon or Perſons may have and take the Premiſes, or any Parcell thereof, of the ſaid Edward Earl of Clarendon, George Duke of Albemarle, William Earl of Craven, John Lord Berkley, Anthony Lord Aſhley, Sir George Carterett, Sir John Colleton & Sir William Berkley, their Heirs and Aſſigns, & the ſame to hold to themſelves their Heirs or Aſſigns, in what Eſtate of Inheritance ſoever, in Fee Simple, or in Fee Sayle or otherwiſe, as to them the ſaid Edward Earl of Clarendon, George Duke of Albemarle, William Earl of Craven, John Lord Berkley, Anthony Lord Aſhley, Sir George, Carteret. Sir John Colleton & Sir William Berkley, their Heirs & Aſſigns, ſhall ſeem expedient. The Statute in the Parliament of Edward, Son of King Henry, heretofore King of. England. our Predeceſſor, commonly call'd the Statute of Quia Emtores Terrar; or any other Statute, Act, Ordinance, Uſe,

Law, Cuſtom, or any other Matter, Cauſe or thing heretofore publiſhed or provided to the contrary in any wiſe notwithſtanding

And becauſe many perſons born & Inhabiting in the ſaid Province, for their Deſerts & Services may expect, & be capable. of Marks of Honour & Favour, which in reſpect of the great Diſtance cannot conveniently be conferred by us, our Will & Pleaſure therefore is & We do by theſe Preſents, give and grant unto the ſaid, Edward, Earl of Clarendon, George Duke of Albemarle, William Earl of Craven, John Lord Berkley, Anthony Lord Aſhley, Sir George. Carterett, Sir John Colleton. & Sir William Berkley, their Heirs & Aſſigns, full Power & Authority to give & Confer unto & upon ſuch of the Inhabitants of the ſaid Province or Territory, as they ſhall think, do or ſhall merit the ſame ſuch Marks of Favour, & Titles of Honour, as they ſhall think fit, ſo as their Titles or Honours be not the ſame as are enjoy'd by, or conferr'd upon any of the Subjects of this our Kingdom of England.

And further alſo, we do by theſe preſents, for us, our Heirs & Succeſſors, give and grant, Licence to them the ſaid Edward Earl of Clarendon, George Duke of Albemarle, William Earl of Craven, John Lord Berkley, Anthony Lord Aſhley, Sir George Carteret, Sir John Colleton, & Sir William Berkley, their Heirs & Aſſigns, full Power & Authority, Liberty and Licence to erect. raiſe & Build within the ſaid Province or Places aforeſaid or any Part or Parts thereof, ſuch & ſo many Forts, Fortreſſes, Caſtles, Cities, Burroughs, Towns, Villages, or any other Fortifications whatſoever; & the ſame or any of them to fortify & furniſh with Ordnance Powder, Shott, Armour, & all other Weapons, Ammunition & Habiliments of War, both defenſive & Offenſive, as ſhall be thought fit and convenient for the ſafety & Welfare of the ſaid Province, & Places, or any part. thereof, and the ſame, or any of them, from time to time, as occaſion ſhall require, to Diſmantle, Diſfurniſh, Demoliſh & pull down; And alſo to Place. Conſtitute & Appoint in, or over all, or any of the ſaid Caſtles, forts, fortifications, Cities Towns, & Places aforeſaid, Governors, Deputy Governors, Magiſtrates, Sheriffs, & other Officers, Civil and Military as to them ſhall ſeem meet: and to the ſaid Cities, Burroughs, Towns, Villages, or any other place or places within the ſaid Province or Territory, to grant Letters, or Charters of Incorporations with all Liberties. Franchiſes & Pri-

vileges requiſite, or uſual, or to, or within this our Kingdom of England granted, or belonging: And in the ſame Cities, Burroughs, Towns & other Places. to conſtitute, erect & Appoint, Such & So many Markets, Marts, & Fairs, as ſhall in that behalf be thought fit and neceſſary; and further alſo, to Erect & make in the Province or Territory aforeſaid; or any part thereof, So many Mannors with ſuch Signories as to them ſhall Seem Meet, & Convenient, & in every of the ſaid Mannors to have & to hold a Court-Baron with all things whatſoever, which to a Court-Baron do belong, & to have & to hold views of franck pledge, & Courts-Leet, for the conſervation of the Peace, and better Government of thoſe Parts, with ſuch Limits, Juriſdiction & Precincts, as by the ſaid Edward Earl of Clarendon. George Duke of Albemarle, William Earl of Craven, John Lord Berkley, Anthony Lord Aſhley, Sir George Carterett, Sir John Colleton, & Sir William Berkley, or their Heirs, ſhall be appointed for that purpoſe, with all things whatſoever, which to a Court-leet or view of Franck Pledge; do belong, the ſame Courts to be holden by Stewards, to be deputed, & authorized by the ſaid Edward Earl of Clarendon. George Duke of Albemarle, William Earl of Craven, John Lord. Berkley, Anthony Lord Aſhley, Sir George Carterett, Sir John Colleton & Sir William Berkley, or their Heirs, by the Lords of the Mannors & leets, for the time being, when the ſame ſhall be Erected,

And becauſe that in ſo remote a Country & ſcituate amongſt ſo many barbarous Nations. the Invaſions as well of Salvages, as other Enemies. Pirates & Robbers may probably be fear'd; Therefore we have given & for Us, our Heirs & Succeſſors do give power by theſe preſents, unto the Said Edward. Earl of Clarendon, George Duke of Albemarle, William Earl of Craven John Lord Berkley, Anthony Lord. Aſhley, Sir George. Carterett, Sir John Colleton & Sir William Berkley, their Heirs or Aſſigns, by themſelves, or their Captains, or other Officers to Levy, Muſter, & Train up all Sorts of Men, of what Condition ſoever, or whereſoever born, whether in the ſaid Province, or elſewhere, for the time being, And to make War & purſue the Enemies aforeſaid, as well by Sea, as by Land; Yea even without the Limits of the ſaid Province, and by God's Aſſiſtance, to Vanquiſh, and take them & being taken, to put them to Death by the Law of War, & to ſave them at their pleaſure; and to do all & every other thing which to the Charge & Office

of a Captain General of an Army do belong, or hath accuſtom'd to belong, as fully & freely as any Captain General of an Army hath had the ſame.

Alſo our Will & pleaſure is, & by this our Charter, We do give & grant unto the ſaid. Edward Earl of Clarendon, George Duke of Albemarle, William Earl of Craven, John Lord Berkley, Anthony Lord Aſhley, Sir George Carterett, Sir John Colleton, & Sir William Berkley, their Heirs and Aſſigns, full power & Liberty & Authority in caſe of Rebellion; Tumult, or Sedition (if any ſhould happen which God forbid) either upon the Land within the Province aforeſaid, or upon the main Sea, in makeing a Voyage thither, or returning from thence, by him & themſelves, their Captains, Deputies, or Officers. to be Authorized under his or their Seals for that purpoſe, To whom alſo for Us, our Heirs & Succeſſors, we do give & grant by theſe preſents, full power & Authority to exerciſe Martial Law, againſt Mutinous & Seditious perſons of thoſe parts, Such as ſhall refuſe to ſubmit themſelves to their Government, or ſhall refuſe to ſerve in the Wars, or ſhall fly to the Enemy, or forſake their Colours or Enſigns or be Loyterers or Stragglers, or otherwiſe howſoever offending againſt law, Cuſtom, or Military Diſcipline, as freely & in as ample Manner & form as any Captain General of an Army, by Vertue of his Office, might, or hath accuſtom'd to uſe the ſame.

And our further pleaſure is & by theſe preſents, for Us, our Heirs & Succeſſors, We do grant unto the ſaid Edward Earl of Clarendon. George Duke of Albemarle, William Earl of Craven, John Lord Berkley, Anthony Lord Aſhley: Sir George Carteret. Sir John Colleton & Sir William Berkley, their Heirs & Aſſigns, & to the Tenants & Inhabitants of the Said Province, or Territory, both preſent & to come & to every of them, that the Said Province or Territory, & the Tenants, & Inhabitants thereof, ſhall not from henceforth, be held or reputed any member or part of any Colony Whatſoever, in America or elſewhere; Now tranſported or made; nor ſhall be depending on or Subject to their Government in any thing. but be abſolutely ſeperated & divided from the ſame. And our pleaſure is, by theſe preſents, that they be Seperated, and that they be Subject immediately to our Crown of England, as depending thereof for ever, And that the Inhabitants of the ſaid Province or Territory, nor any of them, ſhall at any time hereafter be, Compell'd or compellable, or be any way's Subject, or liable to

appear or anſwer to any Matter, ſuit, cauſe, or Plaint whatſoever, out of the Province or Territory aforeſaid, in any other of our Iſlands Collony's or Dominions, in America. or elſewhere other than in our Realm of England and Dominion of Wales. And becauſe it may happen, that ſome of the People and Inhabitants of the ſaid Province, cannot in their private opinions conform to the publick exerciſe of Religion according to the Liturgy, Forms & Ceremonies of the Church of England, or Subſcribe the Oaths & Articles, made & eſtabliſhed in that behalf, and for that the ſame, by reaſon of the remote diſtances of thoſe Places will as we hope, be no Breach of the unity and conformity, eſtabliſhhed in this nation. Our Will & Pleaſure therefore is, & we do by theſe preſents for us, our Heirs & Succeſſors, give & grant unto the ſaid Edward Earl of Clarendon, George. Duke of Albemarle, William Earl of Craven, John Lord Berkley, Anthony Lord Aſhley, Sir George, Carterett, Sir John. Colleton & Sir William Berkley, their Heirs & Aſſigns, full & free Licence, Liberty, & Authority, by ſuch ways & Means as they ſhall think fit, to give and grant unto ſuch Perſon and Perſons, Inhabiting, & being within the ſaid Province or Territory, hereby or by the ſaid recited Letters Patents, mention'd to be granted as aforeſaid, or any Part thereof, ſuch Indulgencies & Diſpenſations in that behalf, for & during ſuch time & times, & with ſuch Limitations and Reſtrictions as they the ſaid Edward Earl of Clarendon, George Duke of Albemarle, William Earl of Craven, John Lord Berkley, Anthony Lord, Aſhley, Sir George Carterett Sir John Colleton & Sir William Berkley, their Heirs & Aſſigns, ſhall in their diſcretion think fit & reaſonable, And that no Perſon or Perſons, unto whom ſuch Liberty ſhall be given, ſhall be any way moleſted, puniſhed, diſquieted, or called in queſtion for any differences in Opinion or Practice, in Matters of Religious Concernment, who do not actually diſturb the civil Peace of the Province, County or Colony, that they ſhall make their abode in. But all & every ſuch Perſon & Perſons, may from time to time, & at all times, freely & Quietly have & enjoy his & their Judgments, & Conſciences in Matters of Religion throughout all the ſaid Province, or Colony, they behaveing themſelves peaceably, & not uſeing this Liberty to Licentiouſneſs, nor to the Civil Injury, or outward diſturbance of others, any Law, Statute, or Clauſe contain'd, or to be con-

tain'd, Uſage or Cuſtoms of our Realm of England to the contrary hereof in any wiſe notwithſtanding

And in caſe it ſhall happen, that any doubts or queſtions ſhou'd ariſe concerning the true ſence & underſtanding of any word, clauſe, or Sentence, contain'd in this our Preſent, Charter, We will, Ordain, and command, that at all times, & in all things ſuch Interpretations be made thereof, & allow'd in all & every of our Courts whatſoever, as lawfully may be adjudged moſt advantageous & favourable to the ſaid Edward, Earl of Clarendon, George Duke of Albemarle, William Earl of Craven John Lord Berkley, Anthony Lord Aſhley, Sir George Carterett, Sir John Colleton & Sir William Berkley, their Heirs & Aſſigns, although Expreſs. mention &c

Witneſs our ſelf at Weſtminſter, the thirtieth day of June, in the Seventeenth Year of our Reign

Per. ipſum Regem

---

*At the Court of St. James's the 1ſt day of March,* 1710.—
*Preſent, The Queen's moſt Excellent Majeſty in Council.*

Upon reading this day at the Board a Repreſentation from the Rt Honble the Lords Commiſſioners for trade & Plantations, in the Words following: In purſuance of your Majeſty's Pleaſure, Commiſſioners have been appointed on the Part of your Majeſty's Colony of Virginia, as likewiſe on the Part of the Province of Carolina, for the ſettling the Bounds between thoſe Governments; And they have met ſeveral times for that purpoſe, but have not agreed upon any one Point thereof, by reaſon of the trifleing delays of the Carolina Commiſſioners, & of the many difficulties by them raiſ'd in relation to the proper Obſervations & ſurvey they were to make. However, the Commiſſioners for Virginia have deliver'd to your Majeſty's Lieut Governor of that Colony an Account of their proceedings, which Account has been under the Conſideration of your Majeſty's Council of Virginia, &c they have made a Report thereon to the ſaid Lieut Governor, who haveing lately tranſmitted unto us a Copy of that Report, we take leave humbly to lay the Subſtance thereof before your Majeſty, which is as follows:

That the Commiſſioners of Carolina are both of them Perſons engag'd in Intereſt to obſtruct the Settling the Boundarys between that Province and the Colony of Virginia; for one of

them has for ſeveral Years been Surveyor General of Carolina, has acquired to himſelf great Profit by ſurveying Lands within the controverted Bounds, & has taken up ſeveral Tracts of Land in his own Name, & ſold the ſame to others, for which he ſtands ſtill oblig'd obtain Patents from the Government of Carolina. The other of them is at this time Surveyor General, & hath the ſame Proſpect of advantage by making future ſurveys within the ſaid Bounds. That the Behavior of the Carolina Commiſſioners has tended viſibly to no other End than to protract and defeat the Settling this Affair: and particularly Mr. Moſeley has uſ'd ſo many Shifts & Excuſes to diſappoint all Conferences with the Commiſſioners of Virginia, as plainly ſhew his Averſion to proceed in a Buſineſs that tends ſo manifeſtly to his diſadvantage. His prevaricating on this occaſion has been ſo undiſcreet and ſo unguarded, as to be diſcover'd in the preſence of the Lieut Governor of Virginia. He ſtarted ſo many objections to the Powers granted to the Commiſſioners of that Colony, with deſign to render their conferences ineffectual, that his Joint Commiſſioner cou'd hardly find an excuſe for him. And when the Lieut Governor had with much adoe prevail'd with the ſaid Mr. Moſeley to appoint a time for meeting the Commiſſioners of Virginia, & for bringing the neceſſary Inſtruments to take the Latitude of the Bounds in diſpute, which Inſtruments he owned were ready in Carolina, he not only fail'd to comply with his own appointment, but after the Commiſſioners of Virginia had made a Journey to his Houſe, and had attended him to the Places proper for obſerving the Latitude, he wou'd not take the trouble of carrying his own Inſtrument, but contented himſelf to find fault with the Quadrant produc'd by the virginia Commiſſioners, tho that Inſtrument had been approv'd by the beſt Mathematicians, and is of univerſal Uſe. From all which it is evident how little hopes there are of Settling the Boundarys above-mention'd, in concert with the preſent Commiſſioners for Carolina. That tho the Bounds of the Carolina Charter are in expreſs words limitted to Weyanoak Creek, lying in or about 36° 30′ of Northern Latitude, yet the Commiſſioners for Carolina have not by any of their Evidences pretended to prove any ſuch Place as Weyanoak Creek, the amount of their Evidence reaching no further than to prove which is Weyanoak River, & even that is contradicted by affidavit taken on the part of Virginia; by which affidavits it appears that, before the Date of the Carolina Charter to this day, the place they pretend to be

Weyanoak River was, & is ſtill, called Nottoway River. But ſuppoſing the ſame had been called Weyanoak River, it can be nothing to their purpoſe, there being a great difference between a River & a Creek. Beſides, in that Country there are divers Rivers & Creeks of the ſame Name, as Potomeck River & Potomeck Creek, Rappahannock River, & Rappahannock Creek, & Several others, tho there are many Miles' diſtance between the mouths of theſe Rivers and the mouths of theſe Creeks. It is alſo obſervable, that the Witneſſes on the Part of Carolina are all very Ignorant perſons, & moſt of them of ill fame & Reputation, on which Account they had been forced to remove from Virginia to Carolina. Further, there appeared to be many contradictions in their Teſtimonys, whereas, on the other hand, the witneſſes to prove that the Right to thoſe Lands is in the Government of Virginia are Perſons of good Credit, their knowledge of the Lands in queſtion is more ancient than any of the Witneſſes for Carolina, & their Evidence fully corroborated by the concurrent Teſtimony of the Tributary Indians. And that right is farther confirm'd by the Obſervations lately taken of the Latitude in thoſe parts, by which tis plain, that the Creek proved to be Weyanoak Creek by the Virginia Evidences, & ſometimes call'd Wicocon, anſwers beſt to the Latitude deſcribed in the Carolina Charter, for it lys in 36° 40′, which is ten Minutes to the Northward of the Limits deſcribed in the Carolina grant, Whereas Nottoway River, lys exactly in the Latitude of 37°, and can by no conſtruction be ſuppoſ'd to be the Boundary deſcribed in their Charter; So that upon the whole Matter, if the Commiſſioners of Carolina had no other view than to clear the juſt right of the Proprietors, ſuch undeniable Demonſtrations wou'd be Sufficient to convince them; but the ſaid Commiſſioners gave too much Cauſe to ſuſpect that they mix their own private Intereſt with the Claim of the Proprietors, & for that reaſon endeavor to gain time in order to obtain Grants for the Land already taken up, and alſo to ſecure the reſt on this occaſion, we take notice, that they proceed to ſurvey the Land in diſpute, notwithſtanding the aſſurance given by the Government of Carolina to the Contrary by their letter of the 17th of June, 1707, to the Government of Virginia, by which letter they promiſed that no lands ſhou'd be taken up within the controverted bounds till the ſame were ſettled.

Whereupon we humbly propoſe, that the Lords Proprietors be acquainted with the foregoing Complaint of the trifleing

delays of their Commiſſioners, which delays tis reaſonable to believe have proceeded from the ſelf-Intereſt of thoſe Commiſſioners, and that therefore your Majeſty's pleaſure be ſignify'd to the ſaid Lords Proprietors, that by the firſt Opportunity they ſend Orders to their Governour or Commander in Chief of Carolina for the time being, to iſſue forth a new Commiſſion, to the purport of that lately iſſued, thereby conſtituting two other Perſons, not having any perſonal Intereſt in, or claim to, any of the Land lying within the Boundary's in the room of Edward Moſeley & John Lawſon. The Carolina Commiſſioners to be appointed being ſtrictly required to finiſh their Survey, & to make a return thereof in conjunction with the Virginia Commiſſioners, within ſix months, to be computed from the time, that due notice ſhall be given by your Majeſty's Lieut Governor of Virginia to the Governor or Commander in Chief of Carolina, of the time & place, which your Majeſty's ſaid Lieut Governor ſhall appoint for the firſt meeting of the Commiſſioners on one part & the other. In order whereunto we humbly offer, that directions be ſent to the ſaid Lieut Governor, to give ſuch Notice accordingly; & if after Notice ſo given, the Carolina Commiſſioners ſhall refuſe or neglect to Join with thoſe on the part of Virginia, in making ſuch ſurvey, as likewiſe a Return thereof within the time before mention'd; that then and in ſuch Caſe the Commiſſioners on the part of Virginia be directed to draw up an Account of the proper obſervations and Survey which they ſhall have made for aſcertaining the Bounds between Virginia & Carolina, and to deliver the ſame in Writing under their Hands and Seals to the Lieut Governor and Council of Virginia, to the end the ſame may be laid before your Majeſty, for your Majeſty's final Determination therein, within, with regard to the Settling of thoſe Boundarys; the Lords Proprietors haveing, by an Inſtrument under their Hands, ſubmitted the ſame to Your Majeſty's royal determination, which inſtrument, dated in March, 1708, is lying in this Office.

And laſtly, we humbly propoſe, that your Majeſty's further pleaſure be ſignifyd to the ſaid Lords Proprietors, and in like manner to the Lieut Governor of Virginia, that no Grants be paſſ'd by either of thoſe Governments of any of the Lands lying within the controverted Bounds, until ſuch Bounds ſhall be aſcertain'd and ſettled as aforeſaid, whereby it may appear whether thoſe Lands do of Right belong to your Majeſty, or to the Lords Proprietors of Carolina.

Her Majeſty in Council, approveing of the ſaid Repreſentation, is pleaſ'd to order, as it is hereby ordered, that the Rt Honble the Lords Commiſſioners for Trade & Plantations Do ſignifye her Majeſty's pleaſure herein to her Majeſty's Lieut Governor or Commander in Chief of Virginia for the time being, and to all Perſons to whom it may belong, as is propoſ'd by their Lordſhips in the ſaid Repreſentation, and the Rt Honble the Lords Proprietors of Carolina are to do what on their part does appertain.

EDW SOUTHWELL.

---

*PROPOSALS for determining the Controverſy relating to the Bounds between the Governments of Virginia and North Carolina, moſt humbly offered for his Majeſty's Royal Approbation, and for the Conſent of the Rt Honble the Lords Proprietors of Carolina.*

Foraſmuch as the diſpute between the ſaid two Governments about their true Limits continues ſtill, notwithſtanding the ſeveral meetings of the Commiſſioners, and all the proceedings of many Years paſt, in order to adjuſt that affair, & ſeeing no ſpeedy Determination is likely to enſue, unleſs ſome Medium be found out, in which both Partys may incline to acquieſce, wherefore both the underwritten Governors having met, and conſider'd the prejudice both to the King & the Lords Proprietors' Intereſt, by the continuance of this conteſt, and truly endeavouring a Deciſion, which they Judge comes neareſt the Intention of Royal Charter granted to the Lords Proprietors, do, with the advice & conſent of their reſpective Councils, propoſe as follows.

That from the mouth of Corotuck River or Inlet, & ſetting the Compaſs on the North Shoar, thereof a due Weſt Line be run & fairly mark'd, & if it happen to cut Chowan River, between the mouths of Nottoway River and Wicocon Creek, then ſhall the ſame direct Courſe be continued towards the Mountains, and be ever deem'd the Sole divideing line between Virginia & Carolina.

That if the ſaid Weſt Line cuts Chowan River to the Southward of Wicocon Creek, then from point of Interſection the Bounds ſhall be allow'd to continue up the middle of the ſaid

Chowan River to the middle of the Enterance into the ſaid Wicocon Creek, and from thence a due Weſt Line ſhall divide the ſaid two Governments.

That if a due Weſt Line ſhall be found to paſs through Iſlands or to cut out ſmall Slips of Land, which might much more conveniently be included in one Province or the other by Natural Water Bounds, In ſuch Caſes the Perſons appointed for runing the Line ſhall have power to ſettle Natural Bounds, provided the Commiſſioners of both Sides agree thereto, and that all ſuch Variations from the Weſt Line, be particularly Noted in the Maps or Plats, which they ſhall return, to be put upon the Records of both Governments, all which is Humbly ſubmitted by

CHALES EDEN.
A. SPOTSWOOD.

---

*Order of the King and Council upon the foregoing Propoſals, At the Court of St. James's the 28th day of March, 1729. Preſent, the King's moſt Excellent Majeſty in Council.*

WHEREAS it has been repreſented to his Majeſty at the Board, that for adjuſting the diſputes, which have Subſiſted for many Years paſt, between the Colonys of Virginia and North Carolina, concerning their true Boundarys, the late Governors of the ſaid colonys did ſome time ſince agree upon certain Propoſals for regulating the ſaid Boundarys for the future, to which Propoſals the Lords Proprietors of Carolina have given their aſſent; And whereas the ſaid Propoſals were this day preſented to his Majeſty as proper for his Royal Approbation,

His Majeſty is thereupon pleaſ'd, with the Advice of his Privy Council, to approve of the ſaid Propoſals, a copy whereof is hereunto annex't, and to order, as it is hereby order'd, that the Governor or Commander in Chief of the Colony of Virginia, do ſettle the ſaid Boundarys, in conjunction with the Governor of North Carolina, agreeable to the ſaid Propoſals.

EDWARD SOUTHWELL.

*The Lieut Governor of Virginia's Commiſſion in obedience to His Majeſty's Order.*

GEORGE the ſecond, by the Grace of God, of great Britain, France and Ireland King, Defender of the Faith, to our truſty and well beloved William Byrd, Richard Fitz-William, and William Dandridge, Eſqrs., members of our council of the Colony and Dominion of Virginia, Greeting: Whereas our late Royal Father of Bleſſed memory was graciouſly pleaſ'd, by Order in his Privy Council, bearing date the 28 day of March 1727, to approve of certain Propoſals agreed upon by Alexander Spotſwood, Eſqr. late Lieut Governor of Virginia, on the one part, and Charles Eden Eſqr. late Governoor of the Province of North Carolina, for determining the Controverſy relating to the Bounds between the ſaid two Governments, and was farther pleaſed to direct and Order, that the ſaid Boundarys ſhoud be laid out & ſettled agreeable to the ſaid Propoſals. Know ye, therefore, that repoſing ſpecial truſt and confidence in your Ability & Provident circumſpection, have aſſign'd, conſtituted & appointed, & by theſe preſents do aſſign, conſtitute & appoint you & every of you jointly & ſeverally, our Commiſſioners for & on behalf of our Colony & Dominion of Virginia, to meet the commiſſioners appointed or to be appointed on the part of the Province of North Carolina, and in conjunction with them to cauſe a Line or Lines of Diviſion to be run and markt, to divide the ſaid two Governments according to the propoſals above-mention'd, & the order of our late Royal Father, Copies of both which you will herewith receive. and we do further give and grant unto you, and in caſe of the Death or abſence of any of you, ſuch of you as ſhall be preſent, full power and Authority to treat & agree with the ſaid Commiſſioners of the Province of North Carolina on ſuch rules and Methods as you ſhall Judge moſt expedient for the adjuſting and finally determining all diſputes or controverſies which may ariſe, touching any Iſlands or other ſmall Slips of Land which may happen to be interſected or cut off by the dividing Line aforeſaid, and which may with more conveniency be included in the One Province or the other by natural water bounds, agreeable to the propoſals aforemention'd, and generally to do and perform all matters and things requiſite for the final determination and Settlement of the ſaid Boundarys, according to the ſaid Propoſals.

And to the end our Service herein may not be diſappointed through the refuſal or delay of the Commiſſioners for the Province of North Carolina, to act in Conjunction with you in ſettling the Boundarys aforeſaid, we do hereby give & grant unto you, or ſuch of you as ſhall be preſent at the time and place appointed for running the dividing Line aforeſaid, full power and Authority to cauſe the ſaid Line to be run and mark'd out, conformable to the ſaid propoſals, having due regard to the doing equal Juſtice to Us, and to the Lords Proprietors of Carolina, any refuſal, diſagreement, or oppoſition of the ſaid Commiſſioners of North Carolina notwithſtanding. And in that caſe we do hereby require you to make a true report of your proceedings to our Lieut Governor, or Commander in Chief of Virginia, in order to be laid before us for our approbation, and final determination herein. And in caſe any Perſon or Perſons whatſoever ſhall preſume to diſturb, Moleſt or reſiſt you, or any of the Officers or Perſons by your direction, in running the ſaid Line, and executing the Powers herein given you, we do by theſe preſents Give and Grant unto you, or ſuch of you as ſhall be attending the ſervice aforeſaid, full power & Authority by Warrant under your or any of your hands and Seals, to order and command all and every the Militia Officers in our counties of Princeſs Anne, Norfolk, Nanſemond, & Iſle of Wight, or other the adjacent Counties, together with the Sheriff of each of the ſaid Counties, or either of them, to raiſe the Militia & poſſe of the ſaid Several Counties, for the removing all force and oppoſition, which ſhall or may be made to you in the due Execution of this our Commiſſion, & we do hereby will and require, as well the Officers of the ſaid militia, as all other our Officers & loving Subjects within the ſaid Counties, & all others whom it may concern, to be obedient, aiding & aſſiſting unto you in all & Singular the Premiſes. And we do in like manner command & require you, to cauſe fair Maps & deſcriptions of the ſaid Dividing Line, and the remarkable places through which it ſhall paſs, to be made and return'd to our Lieut Governor or Commander in Chief of our ſaid Colony for the time being, in order to be entered on Record in the proper Offices within our ſaid Colony. Provided that you do not, by colour of this our Commiſſion, take upon you or determine any Private man's property, in or to the Lands which ſhall by the ſaid dividing Line be included within the Limits of Virginia, nor of any other matter or thing that doth not relate

immediately to the adjuſting, ſettling & final Determination of the Boundary aforeſaid, conformable to the Propoſals hereinbefore mention'd, and not otherwiſe. In Witneſs whereof we have cauſed theſe preſents to be made. Witneſs our truſty and well beloved William Gooch, Eſqr. our Lieut Governor & Commander in Chief of our Colony & Dominion of Virginia, under the ſeal of our ſaid Colony, at Williamſburgh the 14th day of December, 1727, in the firſt Year of our Reign.

WILLIAM GOOCH.

---

*The Governour of N. Carolina's Commiſſion in Obedience to His Majeſty's Order.*

Sir Richard Everard, Baronet, Governor, Captain General, Admiral, and Commander in Chief of the ſaid Province: To Chriſtopher Gale Eſqr. Chief Juſtice, John Lovick, Eſqr., Secretary, Edward Moſeley, Eſqr., Surveyor General & William Little, Eſqr., Attorney General, Greeting: Whereas many diſputes & differences have formerly been between the Inhabitants of this province and thoſe of his Majeſty's Colony of Virginia, concerning the Boundarys and Limits between the ſaid two Governments, which having been duly conſidered by Charles Eden, Eſqr., late Governor of this Province, and Alexander Spotſwood, Eſqr., late Governor of Virginia, they agreed to certain propoſals for determining the ſaid controverſy, & humbly offer'd the ſame for his Majeſty's Royal Approbation, and the conſent of the true & abſolute Lords Proprietors of Carolina. and his Majeſty having been pleaſ'd to ſignify his Royal approbation of thoſe propoſals (conſent'd unto by the true and abſolute Lords Proprietors of Carolina) and given directions for adjuſting & ſettling the Boundarys as near as may be to the ſaid Propoſals:

I, therefore, repoſing eſpecial truſt and confidence in you, the ſaid Chriſtopher Gale, John Lovick, Edward Moſeley and William Little, to be Commiſſioners, on the part of the true and abſolute Lords Proprietors, and that you in conjunction with ſuch Commiſſioners as ſhall be nominated for Virginia, uſe your utmoſt Endeavours, and take all neceſſary care in adjuſting and ſettling the ſaid boundarys, by drawing ſuch a diſtinct Line or Lines of Diviſion between the ſaid two Provinces, as near

as reaſonable you can to the Propoſals made by the two former Governours, and the Inſtructions herewith given you. Given at the Council Chamber in Edenton, under my hand, and the Seal of the Colony, the 21ſt day of February, anno Dom 1727, and in the firſt year of the Reign of our ſovereign Lord, King George the Second.

RICHARD EVERARD.

---

*The Proteſt of the Carolina Commiſſioners, againſt our Proceeding on the Line without them.*

We the Underwritten Commiſſioners for the Government of N. Carolina, in conjunction with the Commiſſioners on the part of Virginia, having run the Line for the diviſion of the two Colonys from Corotuck Inlet, to the South Branch of Roanoak River; being in the whole about 170 Miles, and near 50 Miles without the Inhabitants, being of Opinion we had run the Line as far as would be requiſite for a long time, Judged the carrying it farther would be a needleſs charge and trouble. And the Grand Debate which had ſo long Subſiſted between the two Governments, about Wyanoke River or Creek, being ſettled at our former meeting in the Spring, when we were ready on our parts to have gone with the Line to the utmoſt Inhabitants, which if it had been done, the Line at any time after might have been continued at an eaſy expenſe by a Surveyor on each ſide; and if at any time hereafter there ſhou'd be occaſion to carry the Line on further than we have now run it, which we think will not be in an Age or two, it may be done in the ſame eaſy manner, without the great Expence that now attends it. And on a Conference of all the Commiſſioners, we have communicated our ſentiments thereon, and declar'd our Opinion, that we had gone as far as the Service required, and thought proper to proceed no farther; to which it was anſwered by the Commiſſioners for Virginia, that they Should not regard what we did, but if we deſiſted, they wou'd proceed without us. But we, conceiving by his Majeſty's Order in Council they were directed to Act in conjunction with the Commiſſioners appointed for Carolina, & having accordingly run the Line jointly ſo far, and Exchanged Plans, thought they cou'd not carry on the Bounds ſingly; but that their proceedings without

us wou'd be irregular & invalid, and that it wou'd be no Boundary, and thought proper to enter our Diſſent thereto. Wherefore, for the reaſons aforeſaid, in the name of His Excellency the Lord Palatine, and the reſt of the true and abſolute Lords proprietors of Carolina, we do hereby diſſent and Diſallow of any farther proceedings with the Bounds without our Concurrence, and purſuant to our Inſtructions do give this our DISSENT in Writing.

EDWARD MOSELY.
WILL LITTLE.
C. GALE.
*October 7th*, 1728. J. LOVICK.

---

## *The Anſwer of the Virginia Commiſſioners to the foregoing proteſt.*

WHEREAS, on the 7th of October laſt, a paper was deliver'd to us by the Commiſſioners of N. Carolina, in the Stile of a Proteſt, againſt our carrying any farther, without them, the dividing Line between the 2 Governments, we, the underwritten Commiſſioners on the part of Virginia, having maturely conſidered the reaſons offer'd in the ſaid PROTEST, why thoſe Gentlemen retir'd ſo ſoon from that Service, beg leave to return the following anſwer:

They are pleaſ'd in the firſt place to alledge, by way of Reaſon, that having run the Line near 50 Miles beyond the Inhabitants, it was Sufficient for a long time, in their Opinion for an Age or two. To this we anſwer that, by breaking off ſo ſoon, they did but imperfectly obey his Majeſty's Order, aſſented to by the Lords Proprietors. The plain meaning of that Order was, to aſcertain the Bounds betwixt the two Governments as far towards the Mountains as we cou'd, that neither the King's Grants may hereafter encroach on the Lords Proprietors', nor theirs on the Right of his Majeſty. And tho the diſtance towards the great Mountains be not preciſely determin'd, yet ſurely the Weſt line ſhou'd be carry'd as near them as may be, that both the King's Lands and thoſe of their Lordſhips, may be taken up the ſaſter, and that his Majeſty's Subjects may as ſoon as poſſible extend themſelves to that Natural Barrier. This they will certainly do in a few Years, when they know diſtinctly in which Government they may enter for the Land, as they

have already done in the more northern Parts of Virginia. So that 'tis Strange the Carolina Commiſſioners ſhould affirm, that the diſtance only of 50 miles above the Inhabitants wou'd be ſufficient to carry the Line for an Age or two, eſpecially conſidering that, two or three days before the date of their Proteſt, Mr. Mayo had enter'd with them for 2000 Acres of Land, within 5 Miles of the Place where they left off. Beſides, if we reflect on the richneſs of the Soil in thoſe parts, & the convenience for Stock, we may foretell, without the Spirit of Divination, that there will be many Settlements higher than thoſe Gentlemen went, in leſs than ten Years, and Perhaps in half that time.

Another reaſon mention'd in the Proteſt for their retiring ſo ſoon from the Service is, that their going farther wou'd be a needleſs charge and Trouble. And they alledge that the reſt may be done by one Surveyor on a ſide, in an eaſy manner, whenever it ſhall be thought neceſſary.

To this we anſwer, that Frugality for the Public is a rare virtue, but when the public Service muſt Suffer by it, it degenerates into a Vice. And this will ever be the Caſe when Gentlemen Execute the orders of their Superiors by halves. but had the Carolina Commiſſioners been ſincerely frugal for their Government, why did they carry out Proviſions Sufficient to ſupport them and their Men for ten Weeks, when they intended not to tarry half that time? This they muſt own to be true, ſince they brought 1000 lbs. of Proviſions along with them. Now, after ſo great an Expence in their preparations, it had been no mighty Addition to their Charge, had they endured the Fatigue 5 or 6 Weeks longer. It wou'd at moſt have been no more than they muſt be at, whenever they finiſh their Work, even tho they ſhou'd fancy it proper to truſt a matter of that conſequence to the Management of one Surveyor. Such a one muſt have a Number of Men along with him, both for his aſſiſtance and Defenſe, and thoſe Men muſt have Proviſions to Support them.

Theſe are all the reaſons theſe Gentlemen think fit to mention in their proteſt, tho they had in truth a more Powerful argument for retiring ſo abruptly, which, becauſe they forgot, it will be neighbourly to help them out. The proviſions they intended to bring along with them, for want of Horſes to carry them, were partly droppt by the way, & what they cou'd bring was huſbanded ſo ill, that after 18 days, (which was the whole time we

had them in our Company,) they had no more left, by their own confeſſion, than two Pounds of Biſcuit for each Man, to carry them home. However, tho this was an unanſwerable Reaſon for Gentlemen for leaving the Buſineſs unfiniſht, it was none at all for us, who had at that time Bread Sufficient for 7 Weeks longer. Therefore, leſt their want of Management might put a ſtop to his Majeſty's Service, & fruſtrate his Royal intentions, we judg'd it our Duty to proceed without them, and have extended the Dividing Line ſo far Weſt as to leave the great Mountains on each hand to the Eaſtward of us. And this we have done with the ſame fidelity & exactneſs as if the Gentlemen had continued with us. Our ſurveyors (whoſe Integrity I am perſwaded they will not call in Queſtion) continued to Act under the ſame Oath, which they had done from the beginning. Yet, notwithſtanding all this, if the Government of N. Carolina ſhou'd not hold itſelf bound by that part of the Line which we made without the Aſſiſtance of the Commiſſioners, yet we ſhall have this benefit in it at leaſt, that his Majeſty will know how far his Lands reach towards the South, & conſequently where his Subjects may take it up, & how far they may be granted without Injuſtice to the Lords Proprietors. To this we may alſo add, that having the Authority of our Commiſſion, to act without the Commiſſioners of Carolina, in Caſe of their diſagreement or refuſal, we thought ourſelves bound upon their Retreat to finiſh the Line without them, leſt his Majeſty's Service might Suffer by any honour or neglect on their part.

William Dandridge.
W. Byrd.

---

*The Names of the Commiſſioners to direct the running of the Line between Virginia and North Carolina.*

William Byrd,
Rich'd Fitz-william,
William Dandridge,
Eſqrs, } Commiſſioners for Virginia.

Christopher Gale,
John Lovewick.
Edward Moseley,
W'm Little,
Eſqrs, } Commiſſioners for Carolina.

ALEX'R IRVIN, WILLIAM MAYO, } Surveyors for Virginia.

EDW'D MOSELEY, SAM'LL SWAN, } Surveyors for N. Carolina.

THE REV'D PETER FOUNTAIN, Chaplain.

*Names of the Men employ'd on the part of Virginia to run the Line between that Colony and N. Carolina.*

ON THE FIRST EXPEDITION.

1. Peter Jones,
2. Thomas Jones,
3. Thomas Short,
4. Robert Hix,
5. John Evans,
6. Stephen Evans,
7. John Ellis,
8. John Ellis, Jr.
9. Thomas Wilſon,
10. George Tilman,
11. Charles Kimbal,
12. George Hamilton,
13. Robert Allen,
14. Thomas Jones, Junr
15. James Petillo,
16. Richard Smith,
17. John Rice.

ON THE 2D EXPEDITION.

Peter Jones,
Thomas Jones,
Thomas Short,
Robert Hix,
John Evans,
Stephen Evans,
John Ellis,
John Ellis, Jr.
Thomas Wilſon,
George Tilman,
Charles Kimbal,
George Hamilton,
Thomas Jones, Junr
James Petillo,
Rich'd Smith,
Abraham Jones,
Edward Powell,
William Pool,
William Calvert,
James Whitlock,
Thomas Page.

*Account of the Expence of running the Line between Virginia and N. Carolina.*

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| To the Men's Wages in Currant Money - - | 227 | 10 | 0 |
| To Sundry Diſburſments for Proviſions, &c. - | 174 | 01 | 6 |
| To Paid the Men for 7 Horſes loſt - - - | 44 | 0 | 0 |
| | £495 | 11 | 6 |

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| The Sum of £495 11 6 Current Money reduc't at 15 p cent. Sterling amounts to | 430 | 8 | 10 |
| To paid to colo Byrd | 142 | 5 | 7 |
| To paid to colo Dandridge | 142 | 5 | 7 |
| To paid Mr. Fitz-William | 94 | 0 | 0 |
| To paid to the Chaplain, Mr. Fountain | 20 | 0 | 0 |
| To paid to Mr. William Mayo | 75 | 0 | 0 |
| To paid to Mr. Alex Irvin | 75 | 0 | 0 |
| To paid for a Tent and Marquis | 20 | 0 | 0 |
| | £1000 | 0 | 0 |

This Summ was discharg'd by a Warrant out of His Majesty's Quitrents from the Lands in Virginia.

# INDEX.


ADVENTURERS' Viſit, America, 3.
Albemarle, Duke of, 197-211
Albemarle Sound, 54, 59.
Alexander, Sir William, 9.
Allen, Col., 18.
Allen, Robert, 224.
Allen, Widow, 18.
Alligators, 182.
Ambergris, 165.
Amidas, ſails for Virginia, 2.
Anderſon, Charles, 69.
Andros, Sir Edmond, 9.
Angelica Plant, 99.
Anſwer to Proteſt of Carolina Commiſſioners, 221.
Antidotes to Poiſon, 82, 84, 89, 90.
Appalachian Mountain, 152.
Appamattock River, 86, 137-193.
Appendix, 197.
Aprons, Indian, 171.
Aramanchy River, 181.
Argall, Samuel, 10.
Arms of England, erected in Virginia, 92.
Arrows, Obſolete, 73.
Aſhley, Lord, 197-211.

BABOONS, Mode of Robbing Orchards, 100.
Back Bay, 29.
Badges adopted, 135.
Bainton, Epaphroditus, 86.
Ballance, Mr., 35.
Baltimore, Lord, Grant to, 11.
Barlow, ſails for Virginia, 2.
Bears, 89, 98, 113, 117, 120, 125, 126, 127, 128, 130, 135, 140, 145, 158, 167, 175; Deſcription of, 167; Fiſhing by, 112; Meat, Effects of, 145, 187; Oil, 163; Story, 127-155; Tracks, 128.
Beaſts of Burden, unknown to Indians, 157.
Bearſkin, 185-187; Theology of, 106.
Beaver Creek, 91; Dams, 91; Mode of taking, 91.
Beavers, 175-177; how taken, 176.
Beaver Pond, 83.
Bell's Iſland, 23.
Berkley, Lord, Grant to, 11.
Berkley, Sir William, 14, 197-211.
Birth Day of His Majeſty, 143.
Bladen, Colonel, 31.
Blewing Creek, 93, 173.
Bolling, Colonel, 191, 193.
Bolton's Ferry, 70.
Bombo, a Drink, deſcribed, 57.
Boſton founded, 8.
Boundaries of Carolina, 15.
Boundary Commiſſion formed, 17; aſſemble, 23; Survey began, 25, 27; Curioſity occaſioned by, 30, 46; Diſmal Swamp paſſed, 61; adjourn till Autumn, 70; Survey reſumed, 78; abandoned by Carolina Commiſſioners, 95; continued by Virginia Commiſſioners, 96; Survey ſuſpended, 133; returns to Settlement, 186; concluding Remarks, 194; royal

Approbation of, 211; Appointment of, 217; Names of, 223.
Boyle, Mr., 74.
Brandy, Effects of, 79; loft, 80.
Brinkley, Peter, 52, 54.
Brunfwick County, 83.
Buckingham County, 13.
Buffalo Creek, 97, 170.
Buffalo, 172; how tamed, 173; feek, 94, 172; Tracks, 92.
Byrd, William, 217, 223.

CABINS, Indian, 71.
Cabin Branch, 84.
Cabot, Sebaftian, 9.
Calvert, William, 224.
Canal propofed, 54.
Candleberry, Myrtle, 19.
Canes, Manner of Growth, 102.
Cane Creek, 102.
Canoe Landing, 86.
Cape Fear River, 181.
Carolina Charter, 197; granted, 14, 15.
Carolina Tea, 24.
Carr, Sir Robert, 10.
Cart for Provifions, 80, 85, 87.
Carterett, Sir George, 197-211.
Cafquade Creek, 114, 115, 156.
Catawbas, 67, 120, 141, 175, 180, 181, 183, 188.
Cattle, how kept, 32, 46.
Cedar Ifland, 28.
Cenfure of Carolina Commiffioners, 211.
Chaplain to Boundary Commiffion, 17, 22, 30, 43, 44, 49, 57, 63, 77, 79, 80, 83, 95, 135, 145, 146, 152, 170, 171, 193; Name of, 224.
Charibbe Iflands, Route by Way of, 4.
Charity Mountains, 194.
Charming of Serpents, 87.
Charter of Carolina, 197.
Chaftity, Indian, 187.
Cherokees, 141.
Chefter County, 13.
Chefapeak Bay, entered by Colonifts, 4.
Chowan River, 66, 215, 216.
Chriftenings, 44, 46, 57, 63, 64, 69, 70, 71, 80, 83, 87, 188.
Church firft erected, 5; none in North Carolina, 65; none at Edenton, 59.
Churches' Ifland, 23.
Cider, Fondnefs for, 69.
Clarendon, Earl of, 197-211.
Cliff Creek, 164.
Climate, Remarks on, 159, 160.
Cocquade Creek, 101.
Cohungaroota, 137.
Cohunks, 112.
Cold, Benefits of, 160.
Colleton, Sir John, 197-211.
Colleton Ifland, 2, 14.
Colonization of Virginia began, 2.
Colt's-foot, Plant, 97.
Commiffion of Lieut. Governor of Virginia, 217; Governor of North Carolina, 219.
Confirmation of Boundary, 211.
Connecta Creek, 174.
Connecticut fettled, 8.
Confciences troubled, 95.
Corn raifed, 63.
Coropeak, 45, 52.
Corotuck Inlet, 18, 21, 23, 25, 26, 36, 67; Magiftrate, 65; River, 215, 220.
Cotton, 41-63.
Couriers de Bois, 152.
Crane Creek, 181.
Cranes, Flight of, 69.
Craford, Mr., 19.
Craven, Earl of, 197-211.
Crocodile, 182.
Cromwell, Oliver, 8.
Crooked Creek, 128, 129, 130, 144.
Cub, Adventure with, 154.
Cuftard Complexion explained, 32.
Cypref Swamp, 45.

DALICARLIA, 12.
Dances, Indian, 72.
Dandridge, William, 217, 223.
Dan River, 86, 101, 111, 112, 114, 116, 156, 160, 164.
Deep River, 181.
Deer, 91, 93, 97, 98, 113, 117, 126, 143, 145, 146, 152, 158, 161, 166, 177; hunting, 109, 170; Skins, 162.
Deſpairing Lover's Leap, 131.
Diſmal Swamp, 19, 37, 38, 41-45, 47, 53; Line through, finiſhed, 61.
Dittany, a Remedy, 163.
Dividing Line, Beginning of, 26, 27.
Dogwood Bark as a Medicine, 80.
Doſier's Iſland, 27.
Dreams, 144.
Duke of York, Grant to, 11.
Dutch ſettle New York, 10.

ECHO, remarkable, 45, 191.
Eden, Charles, 17, 216, 217.
Edenton, N. C., 57-60, 63.
Elizabeth, Queen, grants Virginia, 1.
Elizabeth River, 19, 20, 41, 53.
Elk, 134.
Ellis, John, 224.
Ellis, John, Jr., 224.
Embry, Captain, 191.
Emigration began, 3.
Eno River, 180.
Epigram, 76.
Evans, John, 224.
Evans, Stephen, 224.
Everard, Sir Richard, 17, 219, 220.
Expenſes of Survey, 224.
Eyland, Mr., 30.

FECUNDITY, Secret of, 145.
Fences, how made, 59.
Fern Root, an Antidote to Rattleſnake Bite, 88.
Fires, 120, 128, 129.
Fire hunting, 170.
Fire-arms among Indians, 73, 74.
Fiſh, poiſonous, 166.
Fitzwilliam, Richard, 95, 96, 217, 223.
Flat River, 180.
Flax, 41.
Foxes, 58.
Fort, Indian, 71.
Fountain, Rev. Peter, 224.
Fountain's Creek, 80, 81, 83, 84.
French in Canada, 6; ſettle Nova Scotia, 9; Territory of the, 138.
Frog, Egyptian, 177.
Froſt, 89.
Fugitive Slaves, 34.
Future Life, Indian Belief of, 106.

GALE, Chriſtopher, 49, 219, 221, 223.
Gall-buſh, 19, 36.
Geeſe, wild, 87, 111, 112.
Georgia, Trade with, 142.
Gibbs, Governor, 31.
Ginſeng, 161.
Glue Broth, 147.
Gluttony, 139.
Godwin, Mr., 19.
Gooch, William, 17, 219.
Gooſe, cheated by an Echo, 191.
Gout, Treatment of, 135, 138.
Graffenried, Baron de, 174.
Grapes, 98.
Great Creek, 89, 90, 178, 179.
Great Spirit, 97, 106.
Green Sea, 53.
Griffin, Charles, 75.
Gunpowder Plot, 11.

HAMILTON, George, 224.
Hampden viſits New England, 8.
Harding, William, 27.
Harriſon, Henry, 77.

Haw old Fields, 180.
Haw Tree Creek, 89.
Heath, John, 29, 30.
Hennepin, Father, Alluſion to, 63.
Hermit, Reſidence of, 26.
Hickory Trees, 113.
Hicootomony River, 94.
Hico River, 93, 94, 96, 172.
Highland Ponds, 116, 159.
Hill, John, 80.
Hix, Robert, 224.
Hix's Creek, 164.
Hixe, George, 187.
Horſes for Wood Service, 150; Sores on, 166; left or loſt, 125, 126, 142, 149, 154, 156, 167.
Horſe Flies, 163.
Hoſpitality, Indian, 73.
Hoſtages, Indian, 75.
Hudſon, Henry, 10.
Hunter hired, 88.
Hunting in a Ring, 140, 171.
Hurricane, Effects of, 18.

IBIS, Egyptian, 177.
Indian Chaſtity, 73; Religion, 106; Superſtition, 103; Trade, 2, 141, 180, 183; Wars, 120, 184.
Indians as Horſemen, 188; Failure to civilize, 74, 76; have no Sabbath, 153; Marches of, 157; met, 66; Nottoway, 71; Saponi, 88.
Indolence of Settlers, 56, 184, 185.
Inſects, 162.
Inſtructions of Surveyors, 25.
Inundations, 68.
Ipocoacanna, 85.
Irvin, Mr., 54, 158.
Irvin River, 116, 118, 126, 128, 135, 145, 152.
Irwin, Alexander, 17, 145, 224.
Iſle of Wight County, 68.
Ives, Timothy, 41.

JAMES River, 136, 137, 193.
Jameſtown, 5.
Japon, a Plant, 24.
Jones, Abraham, 224.
Jones, Peter, 224.
Jones, Thomas, 224.
Jones, Thomas, Jr., 224.
Jumping Creek, 91.
Juſtice in Corrotuck Precinct, 65.

KEITH, Cornelius, 184.
Kent County, 13.
Kiawan Mountain, 140.
Kimbal, Charles, 224.
Kinchin, Mr., 69, 70, 78, 79.
Kindred, Mr., 70.
Kinquotan, 5.
Knot's Iſland, 23, 27, 28, 29.

LATITUDES obſerved, 25, 146.
Lawſon, John, 66, 174, 214.
Licences to Traders, 142.
Light, Meteoric, 115.
Lightning, Effects of, 67, 149, 150; Philoſophy of, 110.
Liquors, Scent of, 49; ſpent, 96.
Little, William, 57, 219, 221, 223.
Little River, 53, 180.
Lizzard's Creek, 84.
Locuſt Thicket, 129.
Log Houſes, 59.
Louſe, to pilot North, 40.
Lovers' Leap, 140.
Lovick, John, 219, 221, 223.
Lowland Creek, 112, 156.
Lubberland, 56.
Luke Iſland, 197.

MAGNETIC Variation, 24, 27, 67, 90, 143.
Maidenhair, Plant, 97.
Man loſt, 124, 140, 142.
Mandeville, Sir John, 105.
Maps of Boundary, 70, 95, 96.
Marble, 114.

Marriages, 44, 46; with Indians, 76, 77.
Marſton, Mr., 21.
Martha's Vineyard ſettled, 7.
Martyrdom of Nuns, 79.
Maryland taken from Virginia, 11.
Maſſamony Creek, 7, 177.
Maſſachuſetts Charter, 9; Colony, 7.
Mathias, River of, 197.
Matrimony Creek, 149.
Mayo, Joſeph, 63.
Mayo, William, 17, 54, 222, 224.
Mayo River, 126, 127.
Mead, Andrew, 42, 49.
Medicines furniſhed Surveyors, 38.
Meherin Indians, 66.
Meherin River, 67, 70, 80, 81, 187, 190.
Men employed on Survey, Names, 224.
Merchant, Mr., 31.
Militia Training, 70.
Milk, Scarcity of, 32.
Mines, Proſpect of finding, 138.
Miry Creek, 126.
Miſſionaries, 60.
Moni-ſeep Ford, 86.
Moratuck River, 174.
Moſeley, Edward, 16, 18, 63, 79, 85, 212, 214, 219, 223, 224.
Mountains, 103, 128, 131, 136, 140; as a Barrier, 138.
Mules, 150.
Mumford, Colonel, 87, 179, 185, 193.
Muſic, Power of, 167, 168.
Muſkeetos, 28, 30, 46, 59, 164.

NANSEMOND River, 19, 42, 50, 53, 54, 69.
Nauvaſa, 181.
Neuſe River, 174.
Newcaſtle County, 13.
New England, ſet apart from Virginia, 6; Preachers, chance for, 43; Traders, 23.
New Hampſhire ſettled, 8.
New Haven ſettled, 8.
New Inlet, 23.
New Scotland, 9.
New Jerſey ſettled, 12.
New Plymouth ſettled, 7.
New York ſettled, 10.
Nicholſon, General, 10.
Norfolk, 19.
North Carolina, Settlement of Boundaries of, 15; in Reference for, 65; no Churches in, 65; lawleſs, 65.
Northern's Creek, 33.
North River, 28, 30, 53.
North Weſt River, 21, 22, 31, 33, 53.
Norway Mice, 62.
Noſes affected by Diſeaſe, 33.
Nottoway River, 16, 66, 67, 70, 192, 213, 215.
Nottoway Town, 71.
Nuns, Story of, 189, 190.
Nut-Buſh Creek, 90, 178.
Nut Oil, 113.

OCCAANECHY Indian, 188, 190.
Ohimpamony Creek, 91, 175.
Olive Trees, 160.
Opoſſum, 143.
Orchards, 58, 69.
Order of King and Council upon Propoſals, 216.
Otters, 178.

PACO, a Beaſt of Burthen, 157.
Page, Thomas, 224.
Paint-Creek, 90.
Pamptico River, 180.
Panthers, 117.
Paradiſe, Notions of, 106.
Paraquets injure Orchards, 58.
Parker, Richard, 64, 70.

Partridge, Mountain, 100.
Paſquetunk, 53.
Pea Creek, 84.
Peak, [Peague,] 72.
Pedee River, 181.
Penn, William, 13.
Pennſylvania granted, 13.
Penny Royal, a Remedy, 163.
Pequimons, 53.
Petillo, James, 224.
Philadelphia, 13.
Phipps, Sir William, 9.
Phylarrea, 24.
Pigeons, 119.
Pidgeon-Roofl Creek, 85, 87.
Pines, 55.
Plymouth Grant, 6.
Pocoſon, 30, 31, 33, 35, 66.
Pochoon, 77.
Point Comfort, 4.
Poiſoned Fields, 89.
Polecats, 192.
Pool, William, 224.
Pork, Effects of, 32, 33.
Port Royal taken, 9.
Poſts to mark Boundary, 63, 64.
Potomac River, 137, 213.
Poverty, wretched Scene of, 184.
Powhatan River, 4.
Preſcot Landing, 21.
Preſents from Indians, 77.
Priſoners taken by Indians, 122.
Propoſals for determining Controverſy, 215.
Proteſt of Carolina Commiſſioners, 96, 220.
Proviſions, Amount of, 78, 79.
Pym viſits New England, 8.

QUAKERS, 12, 13; Quaker Meeting-houſes, 42.
Quern Stones, 184.

RACCOON, 130.
Raft, 154.
Rappahannock, 213.
Rattle-ſnakes, 70, 82-84, 87; Mode of catching Prey, 87; Oil, 139.
Rattle-ſnake Root, 82, 83, 90.
Raleigh, Sir Walter, 1, 2, 3.
Religion of Indians, 106.
Rhode Iſland ſettled, 7.
Rice, John, 224.
Riley, Miles, 185.
Roanoke River, 81, 84-87, 94, 101, 137, 184, 188, 194, 220.
Roanoke Inlet, 2, 3.
Rockahominy, 109, 121, 146, 148.
Roſemary, wild, 110.
Rum, known as "Kill Devil," 57; Indians fond of, 74.

SABBATH-Breaking, 153, 170.
Sable Creek, 111, 158.
St. Andrew's Croſs, 84.
Santee River, 181, 182.
Sapponi Indians, 75, 88, 187, 188.
Sapponi Chappel, 192.
Sawros, 113.
Saxapahaw River, 180, 181.
Scalping, 122, 186.
Senecas, 174.
Seneca Rattle-ſnake Root, 88, 139.
Sharantow River, 137.
Sheep, raiſing of, 81.
Shells, 24.
Short, Thomas, 224.
Silk Graſs, 171.
Sleeping, Manner of, 131.
Smith, Capt. John, 4.
Smith, Richard, 224.
Smoking introduced at Court, 3.
Snakes, 160.
Somerton Creek, 66.
Sommerton Chapel, 65.
South Virginia, how defined, 1.
Southwell, Edw., 215, 216.
Spermaceti, 166.
Spice Trees, 93.
Spired Leaf Silk Graſs, 24.
Spight, Thomas, 45.
Spight, William, 65.

Spotſwood, Col. A., 17, 75, 76, 188, 216, 217, 219.
Squirrels, 132, 179.
Star Graſs, 82.
Staunton River, 86.
Steukenhocks, 188.
Stinker, 193.
Stony Creek, 192.
Sturgeon Creek, 190.
Sturgeon Fiſhery, 190.
Sugar from Trees, 92.
Sugar-Tree Creek, 93, 172.
Sundays diſregarded, 45.
Superſtition, Indian, 97, 103.
Surveyors appointed, 17; Names of, 224.
Suſſex County, 13.
Swan, Samuel, 18, 23, 51, 54, 63, 79, 224.
Swedes, Settlement of, 12.
Sweet Gum Tree, 165.

TAR, 56, 63.
Tarantula Bites, how cured, 168, 169.
Tarapin caught, 165.
Tar River, 180.
Temperate Climate, 159.
Tetero, King, 188.
Tewahominy Creek, 92.
Tewawhomini Creek, 173.
Thankſgiving, 185, 186.
Tike, 162.
Tilman, George, 224.
Tobacco, Purchaſe of, 50; introduced, 2.
Tortures, 122.
Tradeing Path, 179-181.
Traditions, Indian, 175.
Turkeys, wild, 81, 94, 97, 103, 106, 113, 119, 135, 146, 161, 166, 176, 177.
Turkey Buzzards, 50, 94, 146.
Turpentine, 56.
Turtle's Eggs, 165.
Tuſcarora Indians, 174.
Tuſkarooda Creek, 92.

USHEREES, 181.

VIRGINIA, how defined, 1.

WALKER, Mr., 191.
War Parties, how formed, 121.
Water, Clearneſs of, 86.
Weſt Jerſey Grant, 12.
Wharves, Mode of building, 20.
Weyanoke Creek, 15, 16, 212, 213, 220.
Whales, 165, 166.
White, Mr., 28.
Whitlock, William, 224.
Wicocon Creek, 16, 213, 215.
Wicro-quoi Creek, 191.
Wild-cat, 91, 92.
Wilkins, William, 37.
William and Mary's College, 74, 75.
Wilſons, Thomas, 39, 41, 224.
Wolves, 58, 98, 99, 177.
Wool, 41.

YADKIN River, 181, 188.
Yatapſco, 91, 175, 177.
Yaws, deſcribed, 32, 33.

*FINIS.*

Alb. Discipulus Albanensis

4100